



# COMPLETING The Unfinished REFORMATION

**The Series Volume 3**



**George Akalonu**

## Editorial Team

An organic team is at work used by Holy Spirit to make these revelations available to the Body of Yeshua, Jesus.

Author, Apostle George Akalonu

Publisher, Pastor Grace Akalonu

Director of Studies - Master Class, Apostle Candace Star (Fort Pierce, Florida)

Registrar, Minister Stephanie Foster (Chicago, Illinois)

Managing Editor, Apostle Dr. Katherine Jones (San Diego, California)

Prophet Kandis Carney (Houston, Texas)

Apostle Pat Gowera (Harare, Zimbabwe)

Seema Kale (Dubai, United Arab Emirates)

Elijah Jawon Louis Banks (Kilgore, Texas)

Jasmine Marshall (London, United Kingdom)

Taria Waldon-Dean (Norristown, Pennsylvania)

Janis Crew (West Branch, Iowa)

Toshia Banks (Kilgore, Texas)

Denise Ngari (Kilgore, Texas)

Brittney McCarty (Kilgore, Texas)

Rebecca English (Columbia, South Carolina)

Adeola Akintoye (London, United Kingdom)

Otha Bell (Georgetown, Texas)

Zummie Chinwendu Ebere-Nwadozi (Toronto, Ontario, Canada)

Karen Phillips (Tyler, Texas)

Patti Mkwanzazi (Johannesburg, Gauteng)

Benedicte Musanga Mulyangote (Kanye, Botswana)

Norbet Ceejay Ekeogu (London, United Kingdom)

# **Completing the Unfinished Reformation**

## **Volume 3**

George Akalonu

We strongly believe in the biblical principle freely you receive, freely give. The eBook version is released to you, absolutely free of charge. There are no Babylonian copyright restrictions except this: do not use them to print books! Otherwise, use them to teach, train and help other saints and ministers to grow in grace and be trained to serve the Lord more productively! We welcome support from those who will pray and those who will give financially to keep this Kingdom Culture project available to the remnant. To support this project financially use this link: [paypal.me/kingdombooksclub](https://paypal.me/kingdombooksclub)

Scriptures marked KJV are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION (KJV): KING JAMES VERSION, public domain.

Published by Kingdom Books Club

P.O. Box 741686, San Diego, CA 92174

Library of Congress Control Number: 2017962201

ISBN: 978-1-948291-03-3

All the saints who have been part of the process of birthing Kingdom Culture are acknowledged in both the imprint page as well as the postscript. To Elohim is all the glory for release of His Grace, in 21 years, to apprehend His Heart and download same for distribution to the Kingdom Church!

## Contents

Chapter 52: The Protestant Reformation Martin Luther .....	12
General Introduction.....	12
Profile of Martin Luther .....	12
Environmental Factors preceding birth of Martin Luther.....	13
Thunderstorm conversion.....	14
Spiritual breakthrough .....	14
"Here I stand".....	15
Accomplishments of a sick man.....	16
Chapter 53: Background to the Ninety-Five Thesis .....	17
Explanatory Notes to the Ninety-Five Theses.....	17
Chapter 54: The Ninety-Five Thesis and Covering Letter .....	25
The Ninety-Five Thesis and covering Letter to Albrecht of Mainz.....	25
The Covering Letter.....	30
Chapter 55: Intention of and Reactions to the Ninety-Five Thesis.....	33
"Luther's Intent" .....	37
Distribution and Publication .....	37
Reaction .....	38
Legacy.....	39
Sources.....	40
Chapter 56: Other Reformers and Sub-movements.....	42
Luther and Other Reformers.....	42
Luther's Role in Religious Discussions and his Relationship to Reformers in Other Movements .....	42
Brief Biographies of some Protestant Reformers .....	42
Some of the most influential people in the Protestant Reformation.....	42
Contemporaries of Martin Luther.....	43
Other offspring of the Reformation.....	45
The early Anabaptists.....	45
Puritans .....	46
Baptists.....	47
The Quakers .....	47
Chapter 57: Outcomes of the Reformation Part 1 Positives Successes.....	49
Spiritual .....	49

Monopoly of Roman Catholicism was Broken Forever.....	49
Sole Authority of the Papacy Way Broken.....	49
Salvation by Grace through Faith Became Mainstreamed Again .....	50
Birth and Growth of the Protestant Movement .....	51
Social, Political and Economic Outcomes .....	51
Chapter 58: Outcomes Part 2 Negatives Part 1 .....	55
Consequences of anti-Semitism and the delayed restitution.....	60
Chapter 59: Negative Outcomes of the Protestant Reformation Part 2 .....	62
Examples and explanations.....	63
Mystery of the will .....	63
Chapter 60: Negative Outcomes of the Protestant Reformation Part 3 .....	69
Chapter 61: Negative Outcomes of the Reformation – Part 4 Blood Guiltiness .....	72
Chapter 62: Negative Outcomes of the Reformation – Part 5 The terrible 3! .....	80
Chapter 63: The Dispensation of Ham: Closes out the Human Age .....	86
Some Inconvenient Truths about the Dispensation of Ham.....	86
The Baton in the hands of sons of Ham.....	86
The Baton of the gospel in the House of Ham .....	88
Negative Outcomes of the Hamitic Dispensation.....	89
The Divine Warning that was Ignored .....	91
Chapter 64: Section F: Biblical Blueprint for Final Reformation .....	93
Introduction .....	93
What we must do at the Individual Level .....	94
Chapter 65: Imbibing the Glorious Truths .....	99
Conclusion.....	104
Chapter 66: Making the 6 Fundamental C's a Way of Life.....	107
The 6 Fundamental C's.....	108
Chapter 67: Recovering the Lost Axe Head of Kingdom Life .....	116
Accepting His empowerment through exercise of spiritual gifts and callings.....	118
Chapter 68 : Taking responsibility As Sons of Elohim to Walk in Victory .....	125
The Growth Grid .....	127
Chapter 69: Assured Victory Over the Spirits Which Work Internally .....	132
Chapter 70: The One New Man of Elohim His Remnant in the Earth Realm - Part 1 .....	138
Chapter 71: Disposition of Remnant: Ministers in the End Time .....	145

Chapter 72: Manifesting the Kingdom Church: Key Purpose of Remnant .....	152
The Alpha Church and the Kingdom Message .....	155
Chapter 73: Recovering the Axe Head of Obedience .....	160
Recovering the Lost Axe head.....	162
Return to School Paradigm .....	164
These Biblical Realities Need to Emerge in the Remnant Church .....	164
Chapter 74: Faithfulness in the Ultimate Reformation of The Church .....	167
Chapter 75: The Ultimate Purpose of Reformation: Concerns Time and Eternity .....	174
From Salvation by Grace to Gospel of the Kingdom .....	179
Chapter 76: The Omega Church and Sin: A fresh emphasis .....	182
Case Study of Specific Clauses Now Ignored .....	184
Chapter 77: Resolving the Identity Issue: The True Church is not 'Protestant' .....	188
Danger when saints are not watchful .....	188
Enter the Prince Charming .....	188
Buyer Beware.....	192
Chapter 78: Responsibility for Revelation Deliverance and Distribution .....	197
Truth makes the difference .....	198
Negative Responses need to be avoided .....	199
Positive responses.....	200
Chapter 79: Feed Back from Mentors and Students .....	202
Chapter 80: Feedback from Mentors and Students Part 2 .....	213
Course 139 Completing the Unfinished Reformation.....	<b>Error! Bookmark not defined.</b>
Course Impact Assessment .....	<b>Error! Bookmark not defined.</b>
Postscript .....	<b>Error! Bookmark not defined.</b>
How to be involved .....	<b>Error! Bookmark not defined.</b>
Masterclass Curriculum .....	<b>Error! Bookmark not defined.</b>
Masterclass Mentors .....	<b>Error! Bookmark not defined.</b>
Principal Officers .....	<b>Error! Bookmark not defined.</b>

## Preface for the Kingdom Culture Series

We have tarried before the Lord for some time to receive a rhema concerning how to introduce the books in the series you are about to read. He directed us to share a little bit of how He ordered our steps over a 21-year period between 1996-2017.

In 1996, the Lord called us out of denominationalism to serve His Body and Kingdom. As we resigned from a Pastoral calling and began to serve Him and the Body in a community in Africa (Owerri, Imo State of Nigeria), we held on to one critical vision He released beginning August 1996. At that time, we joined other saints to lament the sad state of Africa on almost all fronts of life. It was surreal to hear the Lord comfort us by saying He had appointed His Church in Africa as instrument of a quick work: Rescuing His Kingdom program in the earth realm from corruption in preparation for the return of King Yeshua, Jesus.

In August 2006, He directed us to relocate to London which as centre of the world would make our Acts 1:8 assignment more impactful on a global scale. Looking back, because we did not see it then, it is significant that it was 100 years after Azusa Street Revival that the Lord in 2006 birthed Global School of Ministry as a catalyst of Reformation, Restoration, and Revival. Again, we did not see clearly then how extensively it was to be used to rediscover Truths which were missed out by Martin Luther in the Protestant Reformation of 1517.

Interestingly, the Lord used various means to make it clear what He was about to do was not raise a man or woman, like Martin Luther was raised prominently and publicly. But rather activate a company of saints worldwide with understanding of Him and the Church. A company of saints who embrace His Kingdom pattern and take their place as His sons who would do all His will. In this regard, the Lord made it clear the election of His Church in Africa was not for the purpose of building an 'African Cultural Church'. The wider and more strategic scope was to use it to use His remnant 'out of the seed of Ham' to impact and connect His seed out of Shem and Japheth to constitute the fourth race which is the Elect Remnant or 'one new man' spoken of by Apostle Paul.

In other words, the focus of the Lord was simply to use the Global School of Ministry project to activate His elect remnant to walk in unity of the Faith. And, be empowered to represent Him and the Kingdom right where they are in various corners of the world where He preserved them from the claws of Babylon. It was then Holy Spirit provided illumination of this anchor scripture:

**Romans 11:5 (KJV)** *5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.*

There is a simple, yet grand key to understand the fundamental difference between the Martin Luther Protestant Reformation and the Kingdom Culture project. The Reformation of Martin Luther was designed to 'Protest' some of the dogma and practices of the Roman Catholic Church when he received revelation of their unbiblical origins.

The Kingdom Culture project, on the other hand, is designed to take the Church back to what it was before the Roman Empire embraced the larger wing of the Church which was tired of persecution and

martyrdom in the 4<sup>th</sup> Century. In other words, through the Kingdom Culture project, the Omega or End Time Church will be a logical conclusion of what had started in the Alpha or First Century Church.

Unlike other reformation projects before it, Kingdom Culture, through the Global School of Ministry and annual Master Class series of the Global Advanced Mentorship Program have two simple keys: Get the Church back into the 'School' Paradigm where Study of the Word is central to both congregational and general ministry. Second, to challenge all saints to receive the Four-dimensional work of Holy Spirit: He Is the Seal of redemption; He uses the Word to Transform Life of Believers from inside out, He Unites saints to live as one indivisible Body of Yeshua notwithstanding their locations or sects; He releases Power through which saints are able to demonstrate the awesome powers of the Risen Yeshua, Jesus!

These are accomplished when leaders and saints sincerely and diligently embrace the ministry of Holy Spirit and the Word through the **T>T>E>A>R process**. It is one where leaders are used by Holy Spirit to:

- **Teach** saints the whole counsel of Holy Scriptures
- **Train** saints to discover and take their places as effective members of the Body of Yeshua
- **Equip** saints with what it takes to walk in victory through mentorship and support
- **Activate** the Gifts and callings of Holy Spirit which may lie dormant in them
- **Release** the saints into productive ministry. This may be by public ordination or Commissioning during ministry events.

500 years after the Protestant Reformation of 1517, the Lord Yeshua, Jesus is activating throughout the earth realm this framework. The framework through which Holy Spirit will undertake training of Reformers who will receive proper understanding of the Pauline Epistles and Master Plan of the true Kingdom Church contained therein, and build individual lives, ministries and congregations accordingly.

This Kingdom Culture project involves release of 40 books on dedicated websites where all saints worldwide who desire to discover, pursue and fulfil their callings as the Royal Priesthood after the order of Melchizedeck can find the teaching resources to train in the comfort of their own homes.

On the other hand, these 40 books will put in the hands of the great company of elect ministers across the world who know the flock is not theirs but Yeshua's. These books are tools with which to systematically transform the operating systems of the ministries committed to their trust from 'Theatres' to 'Schools'. These books collectively make up the curriculum with which to launch their own Global School of Ministry project. The curriculum will ensure every two or three years, fresh sets of fit-for-purpose ministers of the gospel who will serve the Lord with all their hearts are produced.

All 40 books on the websites constitute what it takes to root out the leaven of Babylon derived from our various experiences with Christian Religion. They therefore constitute what we need to embrace and walk in true Kingdom Culture. It is through ministry of the Word that the Church will be prepared and made ready for return of her Groom:

**Ephesians 5:25-27 (KJV)** *25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; 26 that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*

Please intentionally study this and the other resources in the series prayerfully under unction of Holy Spirit with your Bible to confirm all the points made. As you train, necessity is upon you to make your vessel available for Holy Spirit to use to transmit these empowering truths to other saints who yearn for empowerment!

**Psalm 68:11 (KJV) 11** *The Lord gave **the** word: **great was the company** of those that published it.*

**2 Timothy 2:2 (KJV) 2** *And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

**May Elohim, our heavenly Father make you the instrument of His Grace He designed you to be!**

## Use of the Hebraic Names of the Most High

Yahweh, Elohim, Yeshua. During our walk with the Lord, we discovered by leading of Holy Spirit how fundamentally flawed was the intrusion of Rome into the gospel from 4<sup>th</sup> Century AD. Replacement Theology led Rome to take away all Hebraic/Jewish connections as root of what is now called the Christian Faith. What He has led us to do is to call our Father by the Name He revealed Himself to Israel which is Yahweh. In the same way, rather than call our Creator by the generic title God, we find it more appropriate to call Him by the Hebraic Name He revealed to humanity through Moses which is Elohim. The Name, Elohim properly conveys His Unity in Plurality as Father, Son, and Holy Spirit! We also call our King the Name His Father gave Him, Yeshua as well as the Anglicized translation, Jesus derived from the Greek translation, Ioseus.

We do this as led by Holy Spirit, not as part of the so-called sacred Names movement. Neither do we subscribe to the legalistic methods of Judaizers who are intent on dragging saints into the dead works and rituals of Judaism. We do not condemn or malign those who have not yet caught this depth of revelation. Please feel free to call the Most High by what He reveals to you and what you are comfortable with.

## Chapter 52

### The Protestant Reformation Martin Luther

#### General Introduction

It is one of the greatest scandals that the average believer does not have a good understanding of Martin Luther, his life and works. In the rush to 'make it' and succeed, many whose spiritual roots are connected to the Protestant Reformation often tend to live as if it does not matter to know where the Church is coming from. When this is combined with the reality that for many, there is not much consideration of where the Church is going to, the tragic emptiness of Utilitarian theologies (in which Elohim exists to provide for needs of His people) is glaring. In this section, we will examine both the life and works of Martin Luther with the detachment of students of history. The beautiful thing about history is it gives us a fuller picture of the past: The good, bad and ugly so we can be better equipped to escape snares of the enemy. Those who do not understand the Past cannot learn from it neither can they be adequately equipped to apprehend present Opportunities nor navigate the Future.

#### Profile of Martin Luther

The death of John marked the end of what many consider the Apostolic Age. Since then till date of all the personalities whose lives, beliefs, and priorities have impacted what is called Christianity for good and bad, no other approaches the extremely significant lives of two people. The first is Constantine the Great who orchestrated union of the Roman Empire and the larger wing of the Christian Church which eventually made it the Church of Rome. To him can be ascribed the transmutation of the Catholic (Universal) Church to be the Roman Catholic Church.

The second personality is Martin Luther of Germany who essentially challenged some of the excesses of Roman Catholicism, its traditions and dogma that were unspiritual. His efforts led to two broad outcomes:

1. Emergence of the Protestant Reformation generally which has potentially about 1 billion adherents and on a specific level.
2. Foundation of the Lutheran Church which today has about 60-70 million adherents and has been regarded as the Established Church of Germany.
3. The life and ministry of Martin Luther as a reformer illustrate the Biblical truth that one consecrated individual can make a difference!

**Ezekiel 22:30 (KJV)** *30 And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none.*

## Environmental Factors preceding birth of Martin Luther

In 380/381 AD, Roman Catholicism had become the official religion of the Roman Empire as a culmination of the work began by Emperor Constantine the Great in AD 313 when he and Emperor Licinius signed the Edict of Milan. By AD 476, the Western Roman Empire collapsed as an entity, sacked by Barbarian Tribes. In AD 800, Frankish king Charlemagne was crowned Emperor of a revived Holy Roman Empire, beginning a long succession of other Emperors including Charles V under whose reign the Protestant Reformation was launched. At that time, Roman Catholicism was basically the official religion of Europe. But several popes had created various doctrines, dogmas, and traditions of men which kept followers in a perpetual state of bondage through performance of endless rituals that never led to an encounter with Jesus or personal relationship with the heavenly Father. To worsen matters, the sale of Indulgences had been elevated into a money-making machinery to finance some of the building projects of the Roman Catholic Church. For this reason, the strange theory was developed that people could buy Indulgence for purpose of obtaining a shorter purification in Purgatory not just for themselves but also for dead relatives and friends. It was in this spiritually dark environment that Martin Luther was born on November 10, 1483.

Because of the great stature of this personality and relevance of his works to this course, we will devote this entire volume to study two profiles of him. One is from a secular perspective posted on the BBC website while the other is from a spiritual perspective posted on the website of Christianity Today. BBC.co.uk has the following to say of Martin Luther, leader of the Protestant Reformation:

“Luther was a German theologian whose writings inspired the Protestant Reformation. Martin Luther was born on 10 November 1483 in Eisleben. His father was a copper miner. Luther studied at the University of Erfurt and in 1505 decided to join a monastic order, becoming an Augustinian friar. He was ordained in 1507, began teaching at the University of Wittenberg and in 1512 was made a doctor of Theology. In 1510, he visited Rome on behalf of many Augustinian monasteries, and was appalled by the corruption he found there.

Luther became increasingly angry about the clergy selling 'indulgences' - promised remission from punishments for sin, either for someone still living or for one who had died and was believed to be in purgatory. On 31 October 1517, he published his '95 Theses', attacking papal abuses and the sale of indulgences.

Luther had come to believe that Christians are saved through faith and not through their own efforts. This turned him against many of the major teachings of the Catholic Church. In 1519 -1520, he wrote a series of pamphlets developing his ideas - 'On Christian Liberty', 'On the Freedom of a Christian Man', 'To the Christian Nobility' and 'On the Babylonian Captivity of the Church'. Thanks to the printing press, Luther's '95 Theses' and his other writings spread quickly through Europe.

In January 1521, the Pope Leo X excommunicated Luther. He was then summoned to appear at the Diet of Worms, an assembly of the Holy Roman Empire. He refused to recant and Emperor Charles V declared him an outlaw and a heretic. Luther went into hiding at Wartburg Castle. In 1522, he returned to Wittenberg and in 1525 married Katharina von Bora, a former nun, with whom he had six children.

Luther then became involved in the controversy surrounding the Peasants War (1524 - 1526), the leaders of which had used Luther's arguments to justify their revolt. He rejected their demands and upheld the right of the authorities to suppress the revolt, which lost him many supporters.

In 1534, Luther published a complete translation of the bible into German, underlining his belief that people should be able to read it in their own language. The translation contributed significantly to the spread and development of the German language.

Luther's influence spread across northern and eastern Europe and his fame made Wittenberg an intellectual centre. In his final years, he wrote polemics against the Jews, the papacy and the Anabaptists, a radical wing of the reforming movement. Luther died on 18 February 1546 in Eisleben (Martin Luther – by Christianity Today online).

"At last meditating day and night, by the mercy of God, I began to understand that the righteousness of God is that through which the righteous live by a gift of God, namely by faith. Here I felt as if I were entirely born again and had entered paradise itself through the gates that had been flung open."

In the sixteenth century, the world was divided about Martin Luther. One Catholic thought Martin Luther was a "demon in the appearance of a man." Another who first questioned Luther's theology later declared, "He alone is right!"

In our day, nearly 500 years hence, the verdict is nearly unanimous to the good. Both Catholics and Protestants affirm he was not only right about a great deal, but he changed the course of Western history for the better.

### Thunderstorm conversion

Martin was born at Eisleben (about 120 miles southwest of modern Berlin) to Margaret and Hans Luder (as it was locally pronounced). He was raised in Mansfeld, where his father worked at the local copper mines. Hans sent Martin to Latin school and then, when Martin was only 13 years old, to the University of Erfurt to study law. There Martin earned both his baccalaureate and master's degrees in the shortest time allowed by university statutes. He proved so adept at public debates that he earned the nickname "The Philosopher." Then in 1505 his life took a dramatic turn. As the 21-year-old Luther fought his way through a severe thunderstorm on the road to Erfurt, a bolt of lightning struck the ground near him. "Help me, St. Anne!" Luther screamed. "I will become a monk!" The scrupulous Luther fulfilled his vow: he gave away all his possessions and entered the monastic life.

### Spiritual breakthrough

Luther was extraordinarily successful as a monk. He plunged into prayer, fasting, and ascetic practices—going without sleep, enduring bone-chilling cold without a blanket, and flagellating himself. As he later commented, "If anyone could have earned heaven by the life of a monk, it was I." Though he sought by these means to love God fully, he found no consolation. He was increasingly terrified of the wrath of

God: "When it is touched by this passing inundation of the eternal, the soul feels and drinks nothing but eternal punishment." During his early years, whenever Luther read what would become the famous "Reformation text"—Romans 1:17—his eyes were drawn not to the word faith, but to the word righteous. Who, after all, could "live by faith" but those who were already righteous? The text was clear on the matter: "the righteous shall live by faith." Luther remarked, "I hated that word, 'the righteousness of God,' by which I had been taught according to the custom and use of all teachers ... [that] God is righteous and punishes the unrighteous sinner." The young Luther could not live by faith because he was not righteous—and he knew it.

Meanwhile, he was ordered to take his doctorate in the Bible and become a professor at Wittenberg University. During lectures on the Psalms (in 1513 and 1514) and a study of the Book of Romans, he began to see a way through his dilemma. "At last meditating day and night, by the mercy of God, I ... began to understand that the righteousness of God is that through which the righteous live by a gift of God, namely by faith... Here I felt as if I were entirely born again and had entered paradise itself through the gates that had been flung open." On the heels of this new understanding came others. To Luther the church was no longer the institution defined by apostolic succession; instead it was the community of those who had been given faith. Salvation came not by the sacraments as such but by faith. The idea that human beings had a spark of goodness (enough to seek out God) was not a foundation of theology but was taught only by "fools." Humility was no longer a virtue that earned grace but a necessary response to the gift of grace. Faith no longer consisted of assenting to the church's teachings but of trusting the promises of God and the merits of Christ. It wasn't long before the revolution in Luther's heart and mind played itself out in all of Europe.

### **"Here I stand"**

It started on All Saints' Eve, 1517, when Luther publicly objected to the way preacher Johann Tetzel was selling indulgences. These were documents prepared by the church and bought by individuals either for themselves or on behalf of the dead that would release them from punishment due to their sins. As Tetzel preached, "Once the coin into the coffer clings, a soul from purgatory heavenward springs!" Luther questioned the church's trafficking in indulgences and called for a public debate of 95 theses he had written. Instead, his 95 Theses spread across Germany as a call to reform, and the issue quickly became not indulgences but the authority of the church: Did the pope have the right to issue indulgences? Events quickly accelerated. At a public debate in Leipzig in 1519, when Luther declared that "a simple layman armed with the Scriptures" was superior to both pope and councils without them, he was threatened with excommunication.

Luther replied to the threat with his three most important treatises: The Address to the Christian Nobility, The Babylonian Captivity of the Church, and On the Freedom of a Christian. In the first, he argued that all Christians were priests, and he urged rulers to take up the cause of church reform. In the second, he reduced the seven sacraments to two (baptism and the Lord's Supper). In the third, he told Christians they were free from the law (especially church laws) but bound in love to their neighbors. In 1521, he was called to an assembly at Worms, Germany, to appear before Charles V, Holy Roman Emperor. Luther arrived prepared for another debate; he quickly discovered it was a trial at which he was asked to recant his views. Luther replied, "Unless I can be instructed and convinced with evidence

from the Holy Scriptures or with open, clear, and distinct grounds of reasoning ... then I cannot and will not recant, because it is neither safe nor wise to act against conscience." Then he added, "Here I stand. I can do no other. God help me! Amen." By the time an imperial edict calling Luther "a convicted heretic" was issued, he had escaped to Wartburg Castle, where he hid for ten months.

### Accomplishments of a sick man

In early spring of 1522, he was able to return to Wittenberg to lead, with the help of men like Philip Melancthon, the fledgling reform movement. Over the next years, Luther entered more disputes, many of which divided friends and enemies. When unrest resulted in the Peasants' War of 1524–1525, he condemned the peasants and exhorted the princes to crush the revolt. He married a runaway nun, Katharina von Bora, which scandalized many. (For Luther, the shock was waking up in the morning with "pigtales on the pillow next to me.") He mocked fellow reformers, especially Swiss reformer Ulrich Zwingli, and used vulgar language in doing so. In fact, the older he became, the more cantankerous he was. In his later years, he said some nasty things about, among others, Jews and popes and theological enemies, with words that are not fit to print.

Nonetheless, his lasting accomplishments also mounted: the translation of the Bible into German (which remains a literary and biblical hallmark); the writing of the hymn "A Mighty Fortress is Our God"; and publishing his Larger and Smaller Catechism, which have guided not just Lutherans but many others since. His later years were spent often in both illness and furious activity (in 1531, though he was sick for six months and suffered from exhaustion, he preached 180 sermons, wrote 15 tracts, worked on his Old Testament translation, and took many trips). But in 1546, he finally wore out.

Luther's legacy is immense and cannot be adequately summarized. Every Protestant Reformer—like Calvin, Zwingli, Knox, and Cranmer—and every Protestant stream—Lutheran, Reformed, Anglican, and Anabaptist—were inspired by Luther in one way or another. On a larger canvas, his reform unleashed forces that ended the Middle Ages and ushered in the modern era. It has been said that in most libraries, books by and about Martin Luther occupy more shelves than those concerned with any other figure except Jesus of Nazareth. Though difficult to verify, one can understand why it is likely to be true.

### Review Questions

1. Please share 5 things about Martin Luther you consider most remarkable in these two profiles.

## Chapter 53

### Background to the Ninety-Five Theses

#### Explanatory Notes to the Ninety-Five Theses

The document now titled as the Ninety-Five Theses that Martin Luther posted at the door of All Saints Church on October 31, 1517 is of great significance to the entire Protestant Reformation. For this reason, it is profitable to examine the issues necessitating his thoughts and words. That is why we will rely on some materials from other sources to capture the spiritual mood of the era and some of the actions taken by this remarkable historical figure. Let us start with this material on the website of History.com

“The Ninety-Five Theses or Disputation on the Power of Indulgences (Latin: *Disputatio pro declaratione virtutis indulgentiarum*) are a list of propositions for an academic disputation written in 1517 by Martin Luther, professor of moral theology at the University of Wittenberg, Germany, that started the Protestant Reformation, a schism in the Catholic Church which profoundly changed Europe. They advance Luther's positions against what he saw as abusive practices by preachers selling plenary indulgences, which were certificates believed to reduce the temporal punishment for sins committed by the purchasers themselves or their loved ones in purgatory. In the Theses, Luther claimed that the repentance required by Christ for sins to be forgiven involves inner spiritual repentance rather than merely external sacramental confession. He argued that indulgences led Christians to avoid true repentance and sorrow for sin, believing that they can forgo it by purchasing an indulgence. They also, according to Luther, discourage Christians from giving to the poor and performing other acts of mercy, believing that indulgence certificates were more spiritually valuable.

Though Luther claimed his positions on indulgences accorded with those of the pope, the Theses challenge a fourteenth-century papal bull stating the pope could use the treasury of merit and the good deeds of past saints to forgive temporal punishment for sins. The Theses are framed as propositions to be argued in debate rather than necessarily representing Luther's opinions, but Luther later clarified his views in the Explanations of the Disputation Concerning the Value of Indulgences.

Luther sent the Theses enclosed with a letter to Albert of Brandenburg, the Archbishop of Mainz, on 31 October 1517, a date now considered the start of the Protestant Reformation and commemorated annually as Reformation Day. Luther may have also posted the Theses on the door of All Saints' Church and other churches in Wittenberg in accordance with University custom on 31 October or in mid-November. The Theses were quickly reprinted, translated, and distributed throughout Germany and Europe. They initiated a pamphlet war with indulgence preacher Johann Tetzel, which spread Luther's fame even further.

Luther's ecclesiastical superiors had him tried for heresy, which culminated in his excommunication in 1521. Though the Theses were the start of the Protestant Reformation, Luther did not consider indulgences to be as important as other theological matters which would divide the church, such as

justification by faith and the bondage of the will. His breakthrough on these issues would come later, and he did not see the writing of the Theses as the point at which his beliefs diverged from those of Rome.”

As we sought for deeper insight into the underlying issues surrounding the Reformation, we also found that Wiki-source, an associated online compendium to Wikipedia had an excellent document which deserves close study. It was a scholarly work which explained the background to the Ninety-Five Theses. The authors were part of the team which apparently translated the Ninety-Five Theses. We reproduce their work in full here. The credits are duly made at end of the presentation. These scholarly works of history, as we will find later validate the reality that the Reformation of 1517, though a great event, did not completely fulfil the purpose of Elohim.

"A Disputation on the Power and Efficacy of Indulgences" is the full title of the document commonly called "The Ninety-Five Theses." The form of the document was determined by the academic practice of the Middle Ages. In all the Mediaeval Universities, the "disputation" was a well-established institution. It was a debate, conducted according to accepted rules, on any subject which the chief disputant might elect, and no student's education was thought to be complete until he had shown his ability to defend himself in discussions of this kind. It was customary to set forth the subject which was to be discussed, in a series of "theses," which were statements of opinion tentatively advanced as the basis of argument. The author, or some other person whom he might designate, announced himself ready to defend these statements against all comers, and invited all who might wish to debate with him to a part in the discussion. Such an academic document, one out of many hundreds, exhaling the atmosphere of the Mediaeval University, is the Disputation, which by its historical importance has earned the name "The XCV Theses."

The Theses were published on the Eve of All Saints (Oct. 31), 1517. They were not intended for any other public than that of the University, and Luther did not even have them printed at first, though copies were forwarded to the Archbishop of Mainz, and to Luther's own diocesan, the Bishop of Brandenburg. The manner of their publication too was academic. They were simply posted on the door of the Church of All Saints - called the "Castle-church," to distinguish it from its neighbor, the "Town-church" - not because more people would see them there than elsewhere, but because that church-door was the customary place for posting such announcements, the predecessor of the "black-board" in the modern German University. It was not night, but mid-day when the Theses were nailed up, and the Eve of All Saints was chosen, not that the crowds who would frequent the next day's festival might read them, for they were written in Latin, but because it was the customary day for the posting of theses. Moreover, the Feast of All Saints was the time when the precious relics, which earned the man who "adored" them, long years of indulgence, were exhibited to worshipers, and the approach of this high feast-day put the thought of indulgences uppermost in the minds of everybody in Wittenberg, including the author of the Theses.

But neither the Theses nor the results which followed them could be confined to Wittenberg. Contrary to Luther's expectation and to his great surprise, they circulated all through Germany with a rapidity that was startling. Within two months, before the end of 1517, three editions of the Latin text had been printed, one at Wittenberg, one at Niirnberg, and one as far away as Basel, and copies of the Theses had

been sent to Rome. Numerous editions, both Latin and German, quickly followed. Luther's cotemporaries saw in the publication of the Theses "the beginning of the Reformation," and the judgment of modern times has confirmed their verdict, but the Protestant of to-day, and especially the Protestant layman, is almost certain to be surprised, possibly deeply disappointed, at their contents. They are not "a trumpet-blast of reform"; that title must be reserved for the great works of 1520. The word "faith," destined to become the watchword of the Reformation, does not once occur in them; the validity of the Sacrament of Penance is not disputed; the right of the pope to forgive sins, especially in "reserved cases," is not denied; even the virtue of indulgences is admitted, within limits, and the question at issue is simply "What is that virtue?"

To read the Theses, therefore, with a fair degree of comprehension we must know something of the time that produced them, and we must bear two facts continually in mind. We must remember that at this time Luther was a devoted son of the Church and servant of the pope, perhaps not quite the "right frantic and raving papist" he afterwards called himself, but as yet entirely without suspicion of the extent to which he had inwardly diverged from the teachings of Roman theology. We must also remember that the Theses were no attempt at a searching examination of the whole structure and content of Roman teaching, but were directed against what Luther conceived to be merely abuses which had sprung up around a single group of doctrines centering in the Sacrament of Penance. He sincerely thought that the teaching of the Theses was in full agreement with the best traditions of the Church, and his surprise that they should have caused so much excitement is undoubtedly genuine and not feigned. He shows himself both hurt and astonished that he should be assailed as a heretic and schismatic, and "called by six hundred other names of ignominy." On the other hand, we are compelled to admit that from the outset Luther's opponents had grasped far more completely than he himself the true significance of his "purely academic protest."

2. Penance and Indulgence. The purpose of the disputation which Luther proposed to hold was to clear up the subject of the virtue of "indulgences," and the indulgences were the most striking and characteristic feature of the religious life of the Church in the last three Centuries of the Middle Ages. We meet them everywhere—indulgences for the adoration of relics, indulgences for worship at certain shrines, indulgences for pilgrimages here or there, indulgences for contributions to this or that special object of charity. Luther roundly charges the indulgence-vendors with teaching the people that the indulgences are a means to the remission of sins. What are these indulgences?

Their history is connected, on the one hand, with the history of the Sacrament of Penance, on the other with the history of the development of papal power. The Sacrament of Penance developed out of the administration of Church discipline. In the earliest days of the Church, the Christian who fell into sin was punished by exclusion from the communion of the Church. This excommunication was not, however, permanent, and the sinner could be restored to the privileges of Church-fellowship after he had confessed his sin, professed penitence, and performed certain penitential acts, chief among which were alms-giving, fasting and prayer, and, somewhat later, pilgrimage. These acts of penitence came to have the name of "satisfactions," and were a condition precedent to the reception of absolution. They varied in duration and severity, according to the enormity of the offence, and for the guidance of those who administered the discipline of the Church, sets of rules were formulated by which the "satisfactions" or

"penances" were imposed. These codes are the "Penitential Canons." The first step in the development of the indulgences may be found in the practice which gradually arose, of remitting some part of the enjoined "penances" on consideration of the performance of certain acts which could be regarded as meritorious.

The indulgences received a new form, however, and became a part of the regular Church administration, when the popes discovered the possibilities which lay in this institution for the advancement of their own power and the furtherance of their own interests. This discovery seems to date from the time of the Crusades. The crusading-indulgences, granted at first only to those who actually went to the Holy War, subsequently to those also who contributed to the expense of the expedition, were virtually the acceptance of this work as a substitute for any penance which the Church might otherwise require. As zeal for the Crusades began to wane, the indulgences were used more and more freely to stimulate lagging interest; their number was greatly increased, and those who purchased the indulgences with money far outnumbered those who actually took the Cross. Failing in their purpose as an incentive to enlistment in the crusading armies, they showed their value as a source of income, and from the beginning of the XIV Century the sale of indulgences became a regular business.

About the same time a new kind of indulgence arose to take the place of the now somewhat antiquated crusading-indulgence. This was the Jubilee-indulgence, and had its origin in the Jubilee of 1300. By the Bull *Antiquorum Habet Fide*, Boniface VIII granted to all who would visit the shrines of the Apostles in Rome during the year 1300 and during each succeeding centennial year, a plenary indulgence. Little by little it became the custom to increase the number of these Jubilee-indulgences. Once in a hundred years was not often enough for Christians to have a chance for plenary forgiveness, and at last, unwilling to deprive of the privileges of the Jubilee those who were kept away from Rome, the popes came to grant the same plenary indulgence to all who would make certain contributions to the papal treasury.

Meanwhile the Sacrament of Penance had become an integral part of the Roman sacramental system, and had replaced the earlier penitential discipline as the means by which the Church granted Christians forgiveness for sins committed after baptism. The scholastic theologians had busied themselves with the theory of this Sacrament. They distinguished between its "material," its "form" and its "effect." The "form" of the Sacrament was the absolution; its "effect," the forgiveness of sins; its "material," three acts of the penitent: "confession," "contrition," and "satisfaction." "Confession" must be by word of mouth, and must include all the sins which the sinner could remember to have committed; "contrition" must be sincere sorrow of the heart, and must include the purpose henceforth to avoid sin; "satisfaction" must be made by works prescribed by the priest who heard confession. In the administration of the Sacrament, however, the absolution preceded "satisfaction" instead of following it, as it had done in the discipline of the early Church. To justify this apparent inconsistency, the Doctors further distinguished between the "guilt" and the "penalty" of sin.

Sins were classified as "mortal" and "venial." Mortal sins for which the offender had not received absolution were punished eternally, while venial sins were those which merited only some smaller penalty; but when a mortal sin was confessed and absolution granted, the guilt of the sin was done away, and with it the eternal penalty. And yet the absolution did not open the gate of heaven, though it closed the door of hell; the eternal penalty was not to be exacted, but there was a temporal penalty to

be paid. The "satisfaction" was the temporal penalty, and if satisfaction was in arrears at death, the arrearage must be paid in purgatory, a place of punishment for mortal sins confessed and repented, but "unsatisfied," and for venial sins, which were not serious enough to bring eternal condemnation. The penalties of purgatory were "temporal," viz., they stopped somewhere this side of eternity, and their duration could be measured in days and years, though the number of the years might mount high into the thousands and tens of thousands.

It was at this point that the practice of indulgences united with the theory of the Sacrament of Penance. The indulgences had to do with the "satisfaction." They might be "partial," remitting only a portion of the penalties, measured by days or years of purgatory; or they might be "plenary," remitting all penalties due in this world or the next. In theory, however, no indulgence could remit the guilt or the eternal penalty of sin, and the purchaser of an indulgence was not only expected to confess and be absolved, but he was also supposed to be corde contritus, i. e., "truly penitent."

A rigid insistence on the fulfilment of these conditions would have greatly restricted the value of the indulgences as a means of gain, for the right to hear confession and grant absolution belonged to the parish-priests. Consequently, it became the custom to endow the indulgence-venders with extraordinary powers. They were given the authority to hear confession and grant absolution wherever they might be, and to absolve even from the sins which were normally "reserved" for the absolution of the higher Church authorities.

The demand for contrition was somewhat more difficult to meet. But here too there was a way out. Complete contrition included love to God as its motive, and the truly contrite man was not always easy to find; but some of the scholastic Doctors had discovered a substitute for contrition in what they called "attrition," viz., incomplete contrition, which might have fear for a motive, and which the Sacrament of Penance could transform into contrition. When, therefore, a man was afraid of hell or of purgatory, he could make his confession to the indulgence-seller or his agent, receive from him the absolution which gave his imperfect repentance the value of true contrition, released him from the guilt of sin, and changed its eternal penalty to a temporal penalty, then he could purchase the plenary indulgence, which remitted the temporal penalty, and so in one transaction, in which all the demands of the Church were formally met, he could become sure of heaven. Thus, the indulgence robbed the Sacrament of Penance of its ethical content.

Furthermore, indulgences were made available for souls already in purgatory. This kind of indulgence seems to have been granted for the first time in 1476. It had long been held that the prayers of the living availed to shorten the pains of the departed, and the institution of masses for the dead was of long standing; but it was not without some difficulty that the Popes succeeded in establishing their claim to power over purgatory. Their power over the souls of the living was not disputed. The "Power of the Keys" had been given to Peter and transmitted to his successors; the "Treasury of the Church," i. e., the merits of Christ and of the Saints, was believed to be at their disposal, and it was this treasury which they employed in the granting of indulgences; but it seemed reasonable to suppose that their jurisdiction ended with death.

Accordingly, Pope Sixtus IV, in 1477, declared that the power of the Pope over purgatory, while genuine, was exercised only per modum suffragii, "by way of intercession." The distinction was thought

dogmatically important, but to the layman, who looked more to results than to methods, the difference between intercession and jurisdiction was trifling. To him the important thing was that the Pope, whether by jurisdiction or intercession, could release the soul of a departed Christian from the penalties of purgatory. It is needless to say that these indulgences for the dead were eagerly purchased. In filial love and natural affection, the indulgence-vender had powerful allies.

3. The Indulgence of 1515. The XCV Theses were called forth by the preaching of the "Jubilee Indulgence" of 1510, which was not placed on sale in central Germany until 1515. The financial needs of the papacy were never greater than in the last years of the XV. and the first years of the XVI Century, and they were further increased by the resolve of Julius II. to erect a new church of St. Peter, which should surpass in magnificence all the churches of the world. The indulgence of 1510 was an extraordinary financial measure, the proceeds of which were to pay for the erection of the new Basilica, but when Julius died in 1513, the church was not completed, and the money had not been raised.

The double task was bequeathed to his successor, Leo X. On the 31st of March 1515, Leo proclaimed a plenary indulgence for the Archbishoprics of Magdeburg and Mainz, and appointed Albrecht, of Brandenburg, who was the incumbent of both sees and of the bishopric of Halberstadt as well, Commissioner for the sale of this indulgence. By a secret agreement, of which Luther was, of course, entirely ignorant, one-half of the proceeds was to be paid to the Fuggers of Augsburg on account of moneys advanced to the Archbishop for the payment of the fees to Rome, and of the sums demanded in consideration of a dispensation allowing him to occupy three sees at the same time; the other half of the proceeds was to go to the papal treasury to be applied to the building of the new church. The period during which the indulgence was to be on sale was eight years.

The actual work of organizing the "indulgence-campaign" was put into the hands of John Tetzel, whose large experience in the selling of indulgences fitted him excellently for the post of Sub-commissioner. The indulgence-sellers acted under the commission of the Archbishop and the directions of Tetzel, who took personal charge of the enterprise. The preachers went from city to city, and during the time that they were preaching the indulgence in any given place, all other preaching was required to cease. They held out the usual inducements to prospective buyers. The plenary nature of the indulgence was made especially prominent, and the people were eloquently exhorted that the purchase of indulgence-letters was better than all good works, that they were an insurance against the pains of hell and of purgatory, that they availed for all satisfactions, even in the case of the most heinous sins that could be conceived. "Confessional letters" were one of the forms of this indulgence. They gave their possessor permission to choose his own confessor, and entitled him to plenary remission once in his life, to absolution from sins normally reserved, etc. The indulgences for the dead were zealously proclaimed, and the duty of purchasing for departed souls release from the pains of purgatory was most urgently enjoined. So, great was the power of the indulgence to alleviate the pains of purgatory, that the souls of the departed were said to pass into heaven the instant that the coins of the indulgence-buyer jingled in the money-box.

4. Luther's Protest. The Theses were Luther's protest against the manner in which this indulgence was preached, and against the false conception of the efficacy of indulgences which the people obtained from such preaching. They were not his first protest, however. In a sermon, preached July 27th, 1516, he had issued a warning against the false idea that a man who had bought an indulgence was sure of

salvation, and had declared the assertion that souls could be bought out of purgatory to be "a piece of temerity." His warnings were repeated in other sermons, preached October 31st, 1516, and February 24th, 1517. The burden of these warnings is always the same: the indulgences lead men astray; they incite to fear of God's penalties and not to fear of sin; they encourage false hopes of salvation, and make light of the true condition of forgiveness, viz., sincere and genuine repentance.

These warnings are repeated in the Theses. The preaching of indulgences has concealed the true nature of repentance; the first thing to consider is what "our Lord and Master Jesus Christ means," when He says, "Repent." Without denying the pope's right to the power of the keys, Luther wishes to come into the clear about the extent of the pope's jurisdiction, which does not reach as far as purgatory. He believes that the pope has the right to remit "penalties," but these penalties are of the same sort as those which were imposed in the early Church as a condition precedent to the absolution; they are ecclesiastical penalties merely, and do not extend beyond the grave; the true penalty of sin is hatred of self, which continues until entrance into the kingdom of heaven.

The Theses are formulated with continual reference to the statements of the indulgence-preachers, and of the Instruction to the Commissaries issued under the name of the Archbishop of Mainz. For this reason, there is little logical sequence in the arrangement of the Theses, and none of the attempts to discover a plan or scheme underlying them has been successful. In a general way, it may be said that for the positive views of Luther on the subjects discussed, Theses 30–37 and 42–52 are the most vital, while Theses 92–95 are sufficient evidence of the motive which led Luther to make his protest.

5. Conclusion. The editors of this Translation present herewith a new translation of the Theses, together with three letters, which will help the reader to understand the mind of Luther at the time of their composition and his motive in preparing them. The first of these letters is that which was sent, with a copy of the Theses, to Albrecht of Mainz. The second and third are addressed respectively to Staupitz and Leo X., and were written to accompany the "Resolutions," an exhaustive explanation and defense of the Theses, published in 1518, after the controversy had become bitter.

6. Literature. – (a) Sources. The source material for the history of indulgences is naturally widely scattered. The most convenient collection is found in Koehler, *Dokumente zum Ablassstreit*, Tübingen, 1900. For the indulgences against which Luther protested, see, beside the Editions of Luther's Works, Kapp, *Schauplatz des Tetzelschen Ablass-Krams*, Leipzig, 1720; *Sammlung einiger zum päpstlichen Ablass gehörigen Schriften*, Leipzig, 1721; *Kleine Nachlese zur Erläuterung der Reformationsgeschichte*, Leipzig, 1730 and 1733; also Loescher, *Vollständige Reformationsacta*, I, Leipzig, 1720. (b) Secondary Works. Beside the general works in Church History and History of Doctrine, see the Lives of Luther, in German especially those of Köstlin-Kawerau, Kolde, Berger and Hausrath; in English those of Beard, Jacobs, Lindsay, Smith and McGiffert; also Boehmer, *Luther im Lichte der neueren Forschung*, 2d ed., Leipzig, 1910.

On the indulgences in their relation to the Sacrament of Penance, H. C. Lea, *History of Confession and Indulgence*, especially Vol. III, Philadelphia, 1896; Brieger, *Das Wesen des Ablasses am Ausgang des Mittelalters*, Leipzig, 1897, and Article *Indulgenzen* in *PRE.3 IX*, pp. 76 ff. (Eng. in *Schaff-Herzog v.*, pp. 485-88); Gottlob, *Kreuzablass und Almosenablass*, Stuttgart, 1906 (especially valuable for the origin of indulgences).

On the indulgences and the XCV Theses, Koestlin, *Luther's Theologie*, Leipzig, 1883 (Eng. Trans, by Hay, *The Theology of Luther*, Philadelphia, 1897); Bratke, *Luther's XCV Thesen und ihre dogmengeschichtlichen Voraussetzungen*, Göttingen, 1884; Dieckhoff, *Der Ablassstreit dogmengeschichtlich dargestellt*, Gotha, 1886; Lindsay, *History of the Reformation*, I, New York, 1906; Tschachert, *Entstehung der lutherischen und reformierten Kirchenlehre*, Göttingen, 1910.

On the financial aspects of the indulgence-traffic, Schulte, *Die Fugger in Rom*, 2 vols., Leipzig, 1904.

CHARLES M. JACOBS Allentown, Pa.”

### Review Questions

1. Kindly share three things you received from this background to the Ninety-Five Theses

## Chapter 54

### The Ninety-Five Thesis and Covering Letter

#### The Ninety-Five Thesis and covering Letter to Albrecht of Mainz

In this chapter, we will examine the Ninety-Five Thesis of Martin Luther which was nailed to the door of All Saints Church in Wittenberg. As documents go, this was, in essence both a direct repudiation of the obnoxious practice of sale of indulgences to absolve the living and dead from the penalty of their sins as well as an indirect challenge to the authority of the Pope as Supreme Pontiff whose words were law. By this time, Luther was a professing Roman Catholic Priest who was simply trying to correct what he thought were wrong practices and doctrines which brought reproach to the name of the Lord and His Church.

With passage of time, this document assumed a life of its own and is generally regarded as the moral equivalent of throwing down the gauntlet by Martin Luther. It seems however he was not quite aware of the extent to which it would spark off what later became a schism or breakaway project from Roman Catholicism: The Protestant Reformation. The document was originally written in Latin in the manner of academic debates of that era when learned people invited any who had an opinion to come forward to present them. Let us take note that the Ninety-Five Theses do not follow any logical sequence. He just marshalled out issues as they came to mind. Let us remember this scripture as we proceed to discuss the chapter:

**Proverbs 22:28 (KJV)** *28 Remove not the ancient landmark, which thy fathers have set.*

Let us read through a translated version posted on the website of Luther.de.

#### DISPUTATION OF DOCTOR MARTIN LUTHER ON THE POWER AND EFFICACY OF INDULGENCES

OCTOBER 31, 1517

Out of love for the truth and from desire to elucidate it, the Reverend Father Martin Luther, Master of Arts and Sacred Theology, and ordinary lecturer therein at Wittenberg, intends to defend the following statements and to dispute on them in that place. Therefore, he asks that those who cannot be present and dispute with him orally shall do so in their absence by letter. In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, Amen.

1. When our Lord and Master Jesus Christ said, ``Repent" (Mt 4:17), he willed the entire life of believers to be one of repentance.
2. This word cannot be understood as referring to the sacrament of penance, that is, confession and satisfaction, as administered by the clergy.
3. Yet it does not mean solely inner repentance; such inner repentance is worthless unless it produces various outward mortification of the flesh.
4. The penalty of sin remains as long as the hatred of self (that is, true inner repentance), namely till our entrance into the kingdom of heaven.

5. The pope neither desires nor can remit any penalties except those imposed by his own authority or that of the canons.
6. The pope cannot remit any guilt, except by declaring and showing that it has been remitted by God; or, to be sure, by remitting guilt in cases reserved to his judgment. If his right to grant remission in these cases were disregarded, the guilt would certainly remain unforgiven.
7. God remits guilt to no one unless at the same time he humbles him in all things and makes him submissive to the vicar, the priest.
8. The penitential canons are imposed only on the living, and, according to the canons themselves, nothing should be imposed on the dying.
9. Therefore, the Holy Spirit through the pope is kind to us insofar as the pope in his decrees always makes exception of the article of death and of necessity.
10. Those priests act ignorantly and wickedly who, in the case of the dying, reserve canonical penalties for purgatory.
11. Those tares of changing the canonical penalty to the penalty of purgatory were evidently sown while the bishops slept (Mt 13:25).
12. In former times canonical penalties were imposed, not after, but before absolution, as tests of true contrition.
13. The dying are freed by death from all penalties, are already dead as far as the canon laws are concerned, and have a right to be released from them.
14. Imperfect piety or love on the part of the dying person necessarily brings with it great fear; and the smaller the love, the greater the fear.
15. This fear or horror is sufficient in itself, to say nothing of other things, to constitute the penalty of purgatory, since it is very near to the horror of despair.
16. Hell, purgatory, and heaven seem to differ the same as despair, fear, and assurance of salvation.
17. It seems as though for the souls in purgatory fear should necessarily decrease and love increase.
18. Furthermore, it does not seem proved, either by reason or by Scripture, that souls in purgatory are outside the state of merit, that is, unable to grow in love.
19. Nor does it seem proved that souls in purgatory, at least not all of them, are certain and assured of their own salvation, even if we ourselves may be entirely certain of it.
20. Therefore, the pope, when he uses the words "plenary remission of all penalties," does not actually mean "all penalties," but only those imposed by himself.
21. Thus, those indulgence preachers are in error who say that a man is absolved from every penalty and saved by papal indulgences.
22. As a matter of fact, the pope remits to souls in purgatory no penalty which, according to canon law, they should have paid in this life.
23. If remission of all penalties whatsoever could be granted to anyone at all, certainly it would be granted only to the most perfect, that is, to very few.
24. For this reason, most people are necessarily deceived by that indiscriminate and high-sounding promise of release from penalty.
25. That power which the pope has in general over purgatory corresponds to the power which any bishop or curate has in a particular way in his own diocese and parish.

26. The pope does very well when he grants remission to souls in purgatory, not by the power of the keys, which he does not have, but by way of intercession for them.
27. They preach only human doctrines who say that as soon as the money clinks into the money chest, the soul flies out of purgatory.
8. It is certain that when money clinks in the money chest, greed and avarice can be increased; but when the church intercedes, the result is in the hands of God alone.
29. Who knows whether all souls in purgatory wish to be redeemed, since we have exceptions in St. Severinus and St. Paschal, as related in a legend.
30. No one is sure of the integrity of his own contrition, much less of having received plenary remission.
31. The man who actually buys indulgences is as rare as he who is really penitent; indeed, he is exceedingly rare.
32. Those who believe that they can be certain of their salvation because they have indulgence letters will be eternally damned, together with their teachers.
33. Men must especially be on guard against those who say that the pope's pardons are that inestimable gift of God by which man is reconciled to him.
34. For the graces of indulgences are concerned only with the penalties of sacramental satisfaction established by man.
35. They who teach that contrition is not necessary on the part of those who intend to buy souls out of purgatory or to buy confessional privileges preach unchristian doctrine.
36. Any truly repentant Christian has a right to full remission of penalty and guilt, even without indulgence letters.
37. Any true Christian, whether living or dead, participates in all the blessings of Christ and the church; and this is granted him by God, even without indulgence letters.
38. Nevertheless, papal remission and blessing are by no means to be disregarded, for they are, as I have said (Thesis 6), the proclamation of the divine remission.
39. It is very difficult, even for the most learned theologians, at one and the same time to commend to the people the bounty of indulgences and the need of true contrition.
40. A Christian who is truly contrite seeks and loves to pay penalties for his sins; the bounty of indulgences, however, relaxes penalties and causes men to hate them -- at least it furnishes occasion for hating them.
41. Papal indulgences must be preached with caution, lest people erroneously think that they are preferable to other good works of love.
42. Christians are to be taught that the pope does not intend that the buying of indulgences should in any way be compared with works of mercy.
43. Christians are to be taught that he who gives to the poor or lends to the needy does a better deed than he who buys indulgences.
44. Because love grows by works of love, man thereby becomes better. Man does not, however, become better by means of indulgences but is merely freed from penalties.
45. Christians are to be taught that he who sees a needy man and passes him by, yet gives his money for indulgences, does not buy papal indulgences but God's wrath.
46. Christians are to be taught that, unless they have more than they need, they must reserve enough for their family needs and by no means squander it on indulgences.

47. Christians are to be taught that the buying of indulgences is a matter of free choice, not commanded.
48. Christians are to be taught that the pope, in granting indulgences, needs and thus desires their devout prayer more than their money.
49. Christians are to be taught that papal indulgences are useful only if they do not put their trust in them, but very harmful if they lose their fear of God because of them.
50. Christians are to be taught that if the pope knew the exactions of the indulgence preachers, he would rather that the basilica of St. Peter were burned to ashes than built up with the skin, flesh, and bones of his sheep.
51. Christians are to be taught that the pope would and should wish to give of his own money, even though he had to sell the basilica of St. Peter, to many of those from whom certain hawkers of indulgences cajole money.
52. It is vain to trust in salvation by indulgence letters, even though the indulgence commissary, or even the pope, were to offer his soul as security.
53. They are the enemies of Christ and the pope who forbid altogether the preaching of the Word of God in some churches in order that indulgences may be preached in others.
54. Injury is done to the Word of God when, in the same sermon, an equal or larger amount of time is devoted to indulgences than to the Word.
55. It is certainly the pope's sentiment that if indulgences, which are a very insignificant thing, are celebrated with one bell, one procession, and one ceremony, then the gospel, which is the very greatest thing, should be preached with a hundred bells, a hundred processions, a hundred ceremonies.
56. The true treasures of the church, out of which the pope distributes indulgences, are not sufficiently discussed or known among the people of Christ.
57. That indulgences are not temporal treasures is certainly clear, for many indulgence sellers do not distribute them freely but only gather them.
58. Nor are they the merits of Christ and the saints, for, even without the pope, the latter always work grace for the inner man, and the cross, death, and hell for the outer man.
59. St. Lawrence said that the poor of the church were the treasures of the church, but he spoke according to the usage of the word in his own time.
60. Without want of consideration we say that the keys of the church, given by the merits of Christ, are that treasure.
61. For the pope's power is of itself sufficient for the remission of penalties and cases reserved by himself.
62. The true treasure of the church is the most holy gospel of the glory and grace of God.
63. But this treasure is naturally most odious, for it makes the first to be last (Mt. 20:16).
64. On the other hand, the treasure of indulgences is naturally most acceptable, for it makes the last to be first.
65. Therefore, the treasures of the gospel are nets with which one formerly fished for men of wealth.
66. The treasures of indulgences are nets with which one now fishes for the wealth of men.
67. The indulgences which the demagogues acclaim as the greatest graces are actually understood to be such only insofar as they promote gain.

68. They are nevertheless in truth the most insignificant graces when compared with the grace of God and the piety of the cross.
69. Bishops and curates are bound to admit the commissaries of papal indulgences with all reverence.
70. But they are much more bound to strain their eyes and ears lest these men preach their own dreams instead of what the pope has commissioned.
71. Let him who speaks against the truth concerning papal indulgences be anathema and accursed.
72. But let him who guards against the lust and license of the indulgence preachers be blessed.
73. Just as the pope justly thunders against those who by any means whatever contrive harm to the sale of indulgences.
74. Much more does he intend to thunder against those who use indulgences as a pretext to contrive harm to holy love and truth.
75. To consider papal indulgences so great that they could absolve a man even if he had done the impossible and had violated the mother of God is madness.
76. We say on the contrary that papal indulgences cannot remove the very least of venial sins as far as guilt is concerned.
77. To say that even St. Peter if he were now pope, could not grant greater graces is blasphemy against St. Peter and the pope.
78. We say on the contrary that even the present pope, or any pope whatsoever, has greater graces at his disposal, that is, the gospel, spiritual powers, gifts of healing, etc., as it is written. (1 Co 12:28)
79. To say that the cross emblazoned with the papal coat of arms, and set up by the indulgence preachers is equal in worth to the cross of Christ is blasphemy.
80. The bishops, curates, and theologians who permit such talk to be spread among the people will have to answer for this.
81. This unbridled preaching of indulgences makes it difficult even for learned men to rescue the reverence which is due the pope from slander or from the shrewd questions of the laity.
82. Such as: "Why does not the pope empty purgatory for the sake of holy love and the dire need of the souls that are there if he redeems an infinite number of souls for the sake of miserable money with which to build a church?" The former reason would be most just; the latter is most trivial.
83. Again, "Why are funeral and anniversary masses for the dead continued and why does he not return or permit the withdrawal of the endowments founded for them, since it is wrong to pray for the redeemed?"
84. Again, "What is this new piety of God and the pope that for a consideration of money they permit a man who is impious and their enemy to buy out of purgatory the pious soul of a friend of God and do not rather, because of the need of that pious and beloved soul, free it for pure love's sake?"
85. Again, "Why are the penitential canons, long since abrogated and dead in actual fact and through disuse, now satisfied by the granting of indulgences as though they were still alive and in force?"
86. Again, "Why does not the pope, whose wealth is today greater than the wealth of the richest Crassus, build this one basilica of St. Peter with his own money rather than with the money of poor believers?"
87. Again, "What does the pope remit or grant to those who by perfect contrition already have a right to full remission and blessings?"

88. Again, "What greater blessing could come to the church than if the pope were to bestow these remissions and blessings on every believer a hundred times a day, as he now does but once?"

89. "Since the pope seeks the salvation of souls rather than money by his indulgences, why does he suspend the indulgences and pardons previously granted when they have equal efficacy?"

90. To repress these very sharp arguments of the laity by force alone, and not to resolve them by giving reasons, is to expose the church and the pope to the ridicule of their enemies and to make Christians unhappy.

91. If, therefore, indulgences were preached according to the spirit and intention of the pope, all these doubts would be readily resolved. Indeed, they would not exist.

92. Away, then, with all those prophets who say to the people of Christ, "Peace, peace," and there is no peace! (Jer. 6:14)

93. Blessed be all those prophets who say to the people of Christ, "Cross, cross," and there is no cross!

94. Christians should be exhorted to be diligent in following Christ, their Head, through penalties, death and hell.

95. And thus, be confident of entering into heaven through many tribulations rather than through the false security of peace (Acts 14:22). (c) KDG Wittenberg, 1997

## The Covering Letter

In the integrity of his heart, Martin Luther sent a copy of the Ninety-Five Thesis to his superior, Archbishop Albrecht of Mainz with a covering letter. There is ample evidence from the tone of the letter that Luther was simply seeking to address the issue of misuse of Indulgences and how he felt it misrepresented the Roman Catholic Church and pope Leo X who issued them. Unfortunately, the Archbishop did not have the moral inclination to see what Luther was protesting against.

LETTER TO THE ARCHBISHOP ALBRECHT OF MAINZ  
OCTOBER 31, 1517

To the Most Reverend Father in Christ and Most Illustrious Lord, Albrecht of Magdeburg and Mainz, Archbishop and Primate of the Church, Margrave of Brandenburg, etc., his own lord and pastor in Christ, worthy of reverence and fear, and most gracious.

JESUS The grace of God be with you in all its fullness and power! Spare me, Most Reverend Father in Christ and Most Illustrious Prince, that I, the dregs of humanity, have so much boldness that I have dared to think of a letter to the height of your Sublimity. The Lord Jesus is my witness that, conscious of my smallness and baseness, I have long deferred what I am now shameless enough to do, - moved thereto most of all by the duty of fidelity which I acknowledge that I owe to your most Reverend Fatherhood in Christ. Meanwhile, therefore, may your Highness deign to cast an eye upon one speck of dust, and for the sake of your pontifical clemency to heed my prayer.

Papal indulgences for the building of St. Peter's are circulating under your most distinguished name, and as regards them, I do not bring accusation against the outcries of the preachers, which I have not heard, so much as I grieve over the wholly false impressions which the people

have conceived from them; to wit,—the unhappy souls believe that if they have purchased letters of indulgence they are sure of their salvation; again, that so soon as they cast their contributions into the money-box, souls fly out of purgatory; furthermore, that these graces [i. e., the graces conferred in the indulgences] are so great that there is no sin too great to be absolved, even, as they say — though the thing is impossible—if one had violated the Mother of God; again, that a man is free, through these indulgences, from all penalty and guilt.

O God, most good! Thus, souls committed to your care, good Father, are taught to their death, and the strict account, which you must render for all such, grows and increases. For this reason, I have no longer been able to keep quiet about this matter, for it is by no gift of a bishop that man becomes sure of salvation, since he gains this certainty not even by the "inpoured grace" of God, but the Apostle bids us always "work out our own salvation in fear and trembling," and Peter says, "the righteous scarcely shall be saved." Finally, so narrow is the way that leads to life, that the Lord, through the prophets Amos and Zechariah, calls those who shall be saved "brands plucked from the burning," and everywhere declares the difficulty of salvation.

Why, then, do the preachers of pardons, by these false fables and promises, make the people careless and fearless? Whereas indulgences confer on us no good gift, either for salvation or for sanctity, but only take away the external penalty, which it was formerly the custom to impose according to the canons.

Finally, works of piety and love are infinitely better than indulgences, and yet these are not preached with such ceremony or such zeal; nay, for the sake of preaching the indulgences they are kept quiet, though it is the first and the sole duty of all bishops that the people should learn the Gospel and the love of Christ, for Christ never taught that indulgences should be preached. How great then is the horror, how great the peril of a bishop, if he permits the Gospel to be kept quiet, and nothing but the noise of indulgences to be spread among his people! Will not Christ say to them, "straining at a gnat and swallowing a camel!"

In addition to this. Most Reverend Father in the Lord, it is said in the Instruction to the Commissaries which is issued under your name. Most Reverend Father (doubtless without your knowledge and consent), that one of the chief graces of indulgence is that inestimable gift of God by which man is reconciled to God, and all the penalties of purgatory are destroyed. Again, it is said that contrition is not necessary in those who purchase souls [out of purgatory] or buy confessionalia.

But what can I do, good Primate and Most Illustrious Prince, except pray your Most Reverend Fatherhood by the Lord Jesus Christ that you would deign to look [on this matter] with the eye of fatherly care, and do away entirely with that treatise and impose upon the preachers of pardons another form of preaching; lest, perchance, one may some time arise, who will publish writings in which he will confute both them and that treatise, to the shame of your Most Illustrious Sublimity. I shrink very much from thinking that this will be done, and yet I fear that it will come to pass, unless there is some speedy remedy.

These faithful offices of my insignificance I beg that your Most Illustrious Grace may deign to accept in the spirit of a Prince and a Bishop, i. e., with the greatest clemency, as I offer them out of a faithful heart, altogether devoted to you, Most Reverend Father, since I too am a part of your flock.

May the Lord Jesus have your Most Reverend Fatherhood eternally in His keeping. Amen.

From Wittenberg on the Vigil of All Saints, MDXVII.

If it please the Most Reverend Father he may see these my Disputations, and learn how doubtful a thing is the opinion of indulgences which those men spread as though it were most certain.

To the Most Reverend Father,  
Brother Martin Luther.

These two documents are the very bedrock of what later became the Protestant Movement! It reflects the disdain for historical facts that Christians whose roots are in Protestantism do not have access to these documents which is part of their spiritual heritage. For Completing the Unfinished Reformation, it is fundamental that we dispassionately examine all the relevant documents and historical facts of that era.

#### Review Questions

1. Please name any 10 of the Ninety-Five Theses you consider most critical to emergence of the Protestant Reformation. (You can copy and paste if you wish)
2. What strikes you as most significant in this document written 500 years ago?
3. Name one thing which struck you about Luther's letter to Archbishop Albrecht?

## Chapter 55

### Intention of and Reactions to the Ninety-Five Thesis

Let us for a moment cast our minds back into time and visualize what Europe looked like 500 years ago. The Pope was a powerful figure both in the Church and society. He had the power to do and undo including exert strong influence over the Emperor and nobles. In those days, a man like Archbishop Albrecht of Mainz was powerful beyond measure. Those who sold Indulgences on behalf of the Church like Johann Tetzel were very wealthy and vicious, guarding their source of unlimited revenue as fiercely as possible. As he himself made clear, Martin Luther was not deliberately trying to destroy or fight Roman Catholicism because he was very much sold out to it as his religion. He even pledged allegiance to Archbishop Albrecht as the contents of his respectful letter (which some deem as both bold and groveling at the same time) revealed.

It is the good pleasure of our heavenly Father to equip us with a comprehensive understanding of the events of 1517 which sparked the Protestant Reformation and the way He used Martin Luther to deal with the spirit of Babylon which locked up the spiritual destiny of multitudes in Europe and world-wide. In so doing, the Father wishes to bless us with not just revelation from His Word by Holy Spirit but also teach us historical facts which will arm us with the capacity to successfully state the case for the true gospel of Yeshua and the Kingdom to all manner of people: The educated and not so educated; the polished and not so polished; the high and low and indeed any who cross our path. That was the way Elohim prepared Paul the apostle for his awesome and very productive ministry.

Before we dwell on the subject matter of this chapter, let us read one more document: A copy of the letter Martin Luther sent to pope Leo X proclaiming his innocence of all the charges brought by his accusers. It is evident from the tone and contents that Luther framed his protest in terms of highlighting the wrong practice of selling indulgences and the bad reputation it brought to the Roman Catholic Church of which he remained a part. Again, the letter is a classic in both boldness and respectfulness to the point that may even seem he was almost venerating the Pope!

LETTER TO POPE LEO X, ACCOMPANYING  
THE "RESOLUTIONS" TO THE XCV THESES  
1518

To the Most Blessed Father,  
LEO X.

Martin Luther, Augustinian Friar,  
wisheth everlasting welfare.

I have heard evil reports about myself, most blessed Father,  
by which I know that certain friends have put my name in very  
bad odor with you and yours, saying that I have attempted to  
belittle the power of the keys and of the Supreme Pontiff.  
Therefore, I am accused of heresy, apostasy, and perfidy, and

am called by six hundred other names of ignominy. My ears shudder and my eyes are astounded. But the one thing in which I put my confidence remains unshaken -- my clear and quiet conscience. Moreover, what I hear is nothing new. With such like decorations I have been adorned in my own country by those same honorable and truthful men, i.e., by the men whose own conscience convicts them of wrongdoing, and who are trying to put their own monstrous doings off on me, and to glorify their own shame by bringing shame to me. But you will deign, blessed Father, to hear the true case from me, though I am but an uncouth child.

It is not long ago that the preaching of the Jubilee indulgences was begun in our country, and matters went so far that the preachers of indulgences, thinking that the protection of your name made anything permissible, ventured openly to teach the most impious and heretical doctrines, which threatened to make the power of the Church a scandal and a laughing-stock, as if the decretals *De abusionibus quaestorum* did not apply to them.

Not content with spreading this poison of theirs by word of mouth, they published tracts and scattered them among the people. In these books -- to say nothing of the insatiable and unheard of avarice of which almost every letter in them vilely smells -- they laid down those same impious and heretical doctrines, and laid them down in such wise that confessors were bound by their oath to be faithful and insistent in urging them upon the people. I speak the truth, and none of them can hide himself from the heat thereof. The tracts are extant and they cannot disown them. These teachings were so successfully carried on, and the people, with their false hopes, were sucked so dry that, as the Prophet says, "they plucked their flesh from off their bones"; but they themselves meanwhile were fed most pleasantly on the fat of the land. There was just one means which they used to quiet opposition, to wit, the protection of your name, the threat of burning at the stake, and the disgrace of the name "heretic." It is incredible how ready they are to threaten, even, at times, when they perceive that it is only their own mere silly opinions which are contradicted. As though this were to quiet opposition, and not rather to arouse schisms and seditions by sheer tyranny!

None the less, however, stories about the avarice of the priests were bruited in the taverns, and evil was spoken of the power of the keys and of the Supreme Pontiff, and as evidence of this, I could cite the common talk of this whole land. I truly confess that I was on fire with zeal for Christ, as I thought, or with the heat of youth, if you prefer to have it so; and yet I saw that it was not in place for me to make any decrees or to do anything in these matters. Therefore I privately admonished some of the prelates of the Church. By some of them I was kindly received, to others I seemed ridiculous, to still others something worse; for the terror of your name and the threat of Church censures prevailed. At last, since I could do nothing else, it seemed good that I should offer at least a gentle resistance to them, i.e., question and discuss their teachings. Therefore I published a set of theses, inviting only the more learned to dispute with me if they wished; as should be evident, even to my adversaries, from the Preface to the Disputation. Lo, this is the fire with which they complain that all the world is now ablaze! Perhaps it is because they are indignant that I, who by your own apostolic authority am a Master of Theology, have the right to conduct public disputations, according to the custom of all the Universities and of the whole Church, not only about indulgences, but also about God's power and remission and mercy, which are incomparably greater subjects. I am not much moved, however, by the fact that they envy me the privilege granted me by the power of your Holiness, since I am unwillingly compelled to yield to them in things of far greater moment, viz., when they mix the dreams of Aristotle with theological matters, and conduct nonsensical disputations about the majesty of God, beyond and against the privilege granted them.

It is a miracle to me by what fate it has come about that this single Disputation of mine should, more than any other, of mine or of any of the teachers, have gone out into very nearly the whole land. It was made public at our University and for our University only, and it was made public in such wise that I cannot believe it has become known to all men. For it is a set of theses, not doctrines or dogmas, and they are put, according to custom, in an obscure and enigmatic way. Otherwise, if I had been able to foresee what was coming, I

should have taken care, for my part, that they would be easier to understand.

Now what shall I do? I cannot recant them; and yet I see that marvelous enmity is inflamed against me because of their dissemination. It is unwillingly that I incur the public and perilous and various judgment of men, especially since I am unlearned, dull of brain, empty of scholarship; and that too in this brilliant age of ours, which by its achievements in letters and learning can force even Cicero into the corner, though he was no base follower of the public light. But necessity compels me to be the goose that squawks among the swans.

And so, to soften my enemies and to fulfil the desires of many, I herewith send forth these trifling explanations of my Disputation; I send them forth in order, too, that I may be more safe under the defense of your name and the shadow of your protection. In them all may see, who will, how purely and simply I have sought after and cherished the power of the Church and reverence for the keys; and, at the same time, how unjustly and falsely my adversaries have befouled me with so many names. For if I had been such a one as they wish to make me out, and if I had not, on the contrary, done everything correctly, according to my academic privilege, the Most Illustrious Prince Frederick, Duke of Saxony, Imperial Elector, etc., would never have tolerated such a pest in his University, for he most dearly loves the Catholic and Apostolic truth, nor could I have been tolerated by the keen and learned men of our University. But what has been done, I do because those most courteous men do not fear openly to involve both the Prince and the University in the same disgrace with myself.

Wherefore, most blessed Father, I cast myself at the feet of your Holiness, with all that I have and all that I am. Quicken, kill, call, recall, approve, reprove, as you will. In your voice I shall recognize the voice of Christ directing you and speaking in you. If I have deserved death, I shall not refuse to die. For the earth is the Lord's and the fulness thereof. He is blessed forever. Amen.

May He have you too forever in His keeping. Amen.

This text was converted to ascii format for Project Wittenberg by Allen Mulvey and is in the public domain. You may freely distribute, copy or print this text. Please direct any comments or suggestions to: Rev. Robert E. Smith of the Walther Library at Concordia Theological Seminary. Credit: *\_Works of Martin Luther\_* Adolph Spaeth, L.D. Reed, Henry Eyster Jacobs, et Al., Trans. & Eds. (Philadelphia: A. J. Holman Company, 1915) Volume 1, pp. 44-48

---

Because there have been detailed works already done on the subject matter of his intentions as well as reactions to the Ninety-Five Theses, we will need to examine some of them. Let us cite this article from Wikipedia for this chapter:

### “Luther’s Intent”

The Theses are written as propositions to be argued in a formal academic disputation, though there is no evidence that such an event ever took place. In the heading of the Theses, Luther invited interested scholars from other cities to participate. Holding such a debate was a privilege Luther held as a doctor, and it was not an unusual form of academic inquiry. Luther prepared twenty sets of theses for disputation at Wittenberg between 1516 and 1521. Andreas Karlstadt had written a set of such theses in April 1517, and these were more radical in theological terms than Luther's. He posted them on the door of All Saints' Church, as Luther was alleged to have done with the Ninety-Five Theses. Karlstadt posted his theses at a time when the relics of the church were placed on display, and this may have been considered a provocative gesture. Similarly, Luther posted the Ninety-Five Theses on the eve of All Saints' Day, the most important day of the year for the display of relics at All Saints' Church.

Luther's theses were intended to begin a debate among academics, not a popular revolution, but there are indications that he saw his action as prophetic and significant. Around this time, he began using the name "Luther" and sometimes "Eleutherius", Greek for "free", rather than "Luder". This seems to refer to his being free from the scholastic theology which he had argued against earlier that year. Luther later claimed not to have desired the Theses to be widely distributed. Elizabeth Eisenstein has argued that his claimed surprise at their success may have involved self-deception and Hans Hillerbrand has claimed that Luther was certainly intending to instigate a large controversy. At times, Luther seems to use the academic nature of the Theses as a cover to allow him to attack established beliefs while being able to deny that he intended to attack church teaching. Since writing a set of theses for a disputation does not necessarily commit the author to those views, Luther could deny that he held the most incendiary ideas in the Theses.

### Distribution and Publication

On 31 October 1517, Luther sent a letter to Archbishop of Mainz, Albert of Brandenburg, under whose authority the indulgences were being sold. In the letter, Luther addresses the archbishop out of a loyal desire to alert him to the pastoral problems created by the indulgence sermons. He assumes that Albert is unaware of what is being preached under his authority, and speaks out of concern that the people are being led away from the gospel, and that the indulgence preaching may bring shame to Albert's name.

He does not condemn indulgences or the current doctrine regarding them, nor even the sermons which had been preached themselves, as he had not seen them firsthand. Instead he states his concern regarding the misunderstandings of the people about indulgences which have been fostered by the preaching, such as the belief that any sin could be forgiven by indulgences or that the guilt as well as the punishment for sin could be forgiven by an indulgence. In a postscript, Luther wrote that Albert could find some theses on the matter enclosed with his letter, so that he could see the uncertainty surrounding the doctrine of indulgences in contrast to the preachers who spoke so confidently of the benefits of indulgences.

It was customary when proposing a disputation to have the theses printed by the university press and publicly posted. No copies of a Wittenberg printing of the Ninety-Five Theses have survived, but this is not surprising as Luther was not famous and the importance of the document was not recognized. In Wittenberg, the university statutes demand that theses be posted on every church door in the city, but Philip Melancthon, who first mentioned the posting of the theses, only mentioned the door of All Saints' Church. Melancthon also claimed that Luther posted the Theses on 31 October, but this conflicts with several of Luther's statements about the course of events, and Luther always claimed that he brought his objections through proper channels rather than inciting a public controversy. It is possible that while Luther later saw the 31 October letter to Albert as the beginning of the Reformation, he did not post the Theses to the church door until mid-November, but he may not have posted them on the door at all. Regardless, the Theses were well-known among the Wittenberg intellectual elite soon after Luther sent them to Albert.

The Theses were copied and distributed to interested parties soon after Luther sent the letter to Archbishop Albert. The Latin Theses were printed in a four-page pamphlet in Basel, and as placards in Leipzig and Nuremberg. In all, several hundred copies of the Latin Theses were printed in Germany in 1517. Kaspar Nützel (de) in Nuremberg translated them into German later that year, and copies of this translation were sent to several interested parties across Germany, but it was not necessarily printed.

## Reaction

Albert seems to have received Luther's letter with the Theses around the end of November. He requested the opinion of theologians at the University of Mainz and conferred with his advisers. His advisers recommended he have Luther prohibited from preaching against indulgences in accordance with the indulgence bull. Albert requested such action from the Roman Curia. In Rome, Luther was immediately perceived as a threat. In February 1518, Pope Leo asked the head of the Augustinian Hermits, Luther's religious order, to convince him to stop spreading his ideas about indulgences. Sylvester Mazzolini was also appointed to write an opinion which would be used in the trial against him. Mazzolini wrote *A Dialogue against Martin Luther's Presumptuous Theses concerning the Power of Pope*, which focused on Luther's questioning of the pope's authority rather than his complaints about indulgence preaching. Luther received a summons to Rome in August 1518. He responded with *Explanations of the Disputation Concerning the Value of Indulgences*, in which he attempted to clear himself of the charge that he was attacking the pope. As he set down his views more extensively, Luther seems to have recognized that the implications of his beliefs set him further from official teaching than

he initially knew. He later said he may not have begun the controversy had he known where it would lead. The Explanations have been called Luther's first Reformation work.

## Reaction

Johann Tetzel responded to the Theses by calling for Luther to be burnt for heresy and having theologian Konrad Wimpina write 106 theses against Luther's work. Tetzel defended these in a disputation before the University of Frankfurt on the Oder in January 1518. 800 copies of the printed disputation were sent to be sold in Wittenberg, but students of the University seized them from the bookseller and burned them. Luther became increasingly fearful that the situation was out of hand and that he would be in danger. To placate his opponents, he published a Sermon on Indulgences and Grace, which did not challenge the pope's authority. This pamphlet, written in German, was very short and easy for lay people to understand. Luther's first widely successful work, it was reprinted twenty times. Tetzel responded with a point-by-point refutation, citing heavily from the Bible and important theologians. His pamphlet was not nearly as popular as Luther's. Luther's reply to Tetzel's pamphlet, on the other hand, was another publishing success for Luther.

Another prominent opponent of the Theses was Johann Eck, Luther's friend and a theologian at the University of Ingolstadt. Eck wrote a refutation, intended for the Bishop of Eichstätt, entitled the Obelisks. This was in reference to the obelisks used to mark heretical passages in texts in the Middle Ages. It was a harsh and unexpected personal attack, charging Luther with heresy and stupidity. Luther responded privately with the Asterisks, titled after the asterisk marks then used to highlight important texts. Luther's response was angry and he expressed the opinion that Eck did not understand the matter on which he wrote. The dispute between Luther and Eck would become public in the 1519 Leipzig Debate.

Luther was summoned by authority of the pope to defend himself against charges of heresy before Thomas Cajetan at Augsburg in October 1518. Cajetan did not allow Luther to argue with him over his alleged heresies, but he did identify two points of controversy. The first was against the fifty-eighth thesis, which stated that the pope could not use the treasury of merit to forgive temporal punishment of sin. This contradicted the papal bull Unigenitus promulgated by Clement VI in 1343. The second point was whether one could be assured that they had been forgiven when their sin had been absolved by a priest. Luther's Explanations on thesis seven asserted that one could base on God's promise, but Cajetan argued that the humble Christian should never presume to be certain of their standing before God. Luther refused to recant and requested that the case be reviewed by university theologians. This request was denied, so Luther appealed to the pope before leaving Augsburg. Luther was finally excommunicated in 1521 after he burned the papal bull threatening him to recant or face excommunication.

## Legacy

The indulgence controversy set off by the Theses was the beginning of the Protestant Reformation, a schism in the Catholic Church which initiated profound and lasting social and political change in Europe. Luther later stated that the issue of indulgences was insignificant relative to controversies he would enter later, such as his debate with Erasmus over the bondage of the will, nor did he see the controversy

as important to his intellectual breakthrough regarding the gospel. Luther later wrote that at the time of the Theses he remained a "papist", and he did not seem to think the Theses represented a break with established Catholic doctrine. But it was out of the indulgences controversy that the movement which would be called the Reformation began, and the controversy propelled Luther to the leadership position he would hold in that movement. The Theses also made evident that Luther believed the church was not preaching properly and that this put the laity in serious danger. Further, the Theses contradicted the decree of Pope Clement VI, that indulgences are the treasury of the church. This disregard for papal authority presaged later conflicts.

31 October 1517, the day Luther sent the Theses to Albert, was commemorated as the beginning of the Reformation as early as 1527, when Luther and his friends raised a glass of beer to commemorate the "trampling out of indulgences". The posting of the Theses was established in the historiography of the Reformation as the beginning of the movement by Philip Melancthon in his 1548 *Historia de vita et actis Lutheri*. During the 1617 Reformation Jubilee, the centenary of 31 October was celebrated by a procession to the Wittenberg Church where Luther was believed to have posted the Theses. An engraving was made showing Luther writing the Theses on the door of the church with a gigantic quill. The quill penetrates the head of a lion symbolizing Pope Leo X. In 1668, 31 October was made Reformation Day, an annual holiday in Electoral Saxony, which spread to other Lutheran lands.

#### Sources

- Brecht, Martin (1985) [1981]. *Sein Weg zur Reformation 1483–1521* [Martin Luther: His Road to Reformation 1483–1521] (in German). Translated by James L. Schaff. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress. ISBN 978-0-8006-2813-0 – via Questia. (Subscription required (help)).
- Cummings, Brian (2002). *The Literary Culture of the Reformation: Grammar and Grace*. Oxford: Oxford University Press. doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780198187356.001.0001 – via Oxford Scholarship Online. (Subscription required (help)).
- Dixon, C. Scott (2002). *The Reformation in Germany*. Malden, Massachusetts: Blackwell.
- Hendrix, Scott H. (2015). *Martin Luther: Visionary Reformer*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. ISBN 978-0-300-16669-9.
- Hequet, Suzanne (2015). "The Proceedings at Augsburg, 1518". In Wengert, Timothy J. *The Annotated Luther, Volume 1: The Roots of Reform*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress. pp. 121–166. ISBN 978-1-4514-6535-8 – via Project MUSE. (Subscription required (help)).
- Junghans, Helmar (2003). "Luther's Wittenberg". In McKim, Donald K. *Cambridge Companion to Martin Luther*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. pp. 20–36 – via Questia. (Subscription required (help)).
- Leppin, Volker; Wengert, Timothy J. (2015). "Sources for and against the Posting of the Ninety-Five Theses" (PDF). *Lutheran Quarterly*. 29: 373–398.
- Lohse, Bernhard (1999) [1995]. *Luthers Theologie in ihrer historischen Entwicklung und in ihrem systematischen Zusammenhang* [Martin Luther's Theology: Its Historical and Systematic Development. Contributors] (in German). Translated by Roy A. Harrisville. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress. ISBN 978-0-8006-3091-1 – via Questia. (Subscription required (help)).

- Lohse, Bernhard (1986) [1980]. *Martin Luther—Eine Einfubrung in sein Leben und sein Werk* [Martin Luther: An Introduction to His Life and Work] (in German). Translated by Robert C. Schultz. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress. ISBN 978-0-8006-0764-7 – via Questia. (Subscription required (help)).
- Marius, Richard (1999). *Martin Luther: The Christian Between God and Death*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap. ISBN 978-0-674-55090-2.
- McGrath, Alister E. (2011). *Luther's Theology of the Cross: Martin Luther's Theological Breakthrough*. Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell – via Questia. (Subscription required (help)).
- Noll, Mark A. (2015). *In the Beginning Was the Word: The Bible in American Public Life, 1492–1783*. New York: Oxford University Press. doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780190263980.001.0001. ISBN 978-0-19-026398-0 – via Oxford Scholarship Online. (Subscription required (help)).
- Oberman, Heiko A. (2006) [1982]. *Luther: Mensch zwischen Gott und Teufel* [Luther: Man Between God and the Devil] (in German). Translated by Eileen Walliser-Schwarzbart. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. ISBN 978-0-300-10313-7.
- Pettegree, Andres (2015). *Brand Luther*. New York: Penguin. ISBN 978-1-59420-496-8.
- Stephenson, Barry (2010). *Performing the Reformation: Religious Festivals in Contemporary Wittenberg*. New York: Oxford University Press. doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199732753.001.0001 – via Oxford Scholarship Online. (Subscription required (help)).
- Waibel, Paul R. (2005). *Martin Luther: A Brief Introduction to His Life and Works*. Wheeling, IL: Harlan Davidson. ISBN 978-0-88295-231-4 – via Questia. (Subscription required (help)).
- Wengert, Timothy J. (2015a). *Martin Luther's Ninety-Five Theses: With Introduction, Commentary, and Study Guide*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress – via Project MUSE. (Subscription required (help)).
- Wengert, Timothy J. (2015b). "[The 95 Theses or] Disputation for Clarifying the Power of Indulgences, 1517". In Wengert, Timothy J. *The Annotated Luther, Volume 1: The Roots of Reform*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress. pp. 13–46. ISBN 978-1-4514-6535-8 – via Project MUSE. (Subscription required (help)).
- Wicks, Jared (1967). "Martin Luther's Treatise on Indulgences" (PDF). *Theological Studies*. 28 (3): 481–518.

### Review Questions

1. What is it in the letter of Martin Luther to Pope Leo X which you consider most significant.
2. Do you agree/disagree with the thought that Luther's intention in writing the 95 Thesis was not to break away from the Roman Catholic Church but to reform it? Please give reason

## Chapter 56

### Other Reformers and Sub-movements

#### Luther and Other Reformers

Before we proceed to discuss outcomes of the Reformation, it is only fair we acknowledge the reality that there were other vessels who contributed to the 'Protest' against Rome. Significantly, it must be noted the reformers were few! This may be because of three inter-related factors:

- i. The hold of Rome over Medieval Europe was extremely strong
- ii. Few people had access to the Holy Scriptures. With biblical illiteracy, there was no way any one knew more than what the priests and the Church as an institution said.
- iii. From a spiritual point of view, it may also be that the fullness of time had not yet come.

Our sources for the brief profiles are the web pages of [luther.de](http://luther.de) and [biographyonline.com](http://biographyonline.com) with additional supporting materials from website of the Lutheran Church of Resurrection in Yardley, Pennsylvania, [lcr.yardley.org](http://lcr.yardley.org). Let us start with this frank exposition in [luther.de](http://luther.de)

#### Luther's Role in Religious Discussions and his Relationship to Reformers in Other Movements

Luther's moderate approach, his attitude towards the insurgent peasants, and his compromises with sovereigns caused him to be accused by all sides. On the other hand, Luther was constantly under pressure to defend the Reformation politically and theologically against the Roman Catholic faction. Many of his ex-supporters did not want to help bear the burden of this thin line Luther was walking. Already in 1524-26 Luther had fought with the Dutch humanist Erasmus von Rotterdam which caused lots of stress to the reformation and ended in a split among humanists who had previously welcomed Luther's reforms. The difference of opinion between Luther and Karlstadt or between Luther and the Swiss reformer Zwingli about the role of communion in the worship service led to the Marburg Religious Discussions of 1529, where only one partial agreement was reached. Luther and Melanchthon were critically opposed to the Baptist movement; however, when the Baptist's empire in Münster was overthrown in 1534-1535, the two condemned the treatment of the Baptist. In 1537, a clash ensued between Luther and Johann Agricola, one of Luther's supporters in Wittenberg who ended up leaving Wittenberg in 1540. (c) KDG Wittenberg 1997.

#### Brief Biographies of some Protestant Reformers

This section focuses on personalities and sub-Movements within the Reformation Movement, Our source for this section is the web page: [biographyonline.net/people/famous/p...](http://biographyonline.net/people/famous/p...) with supporting materials from [lcr.yardley.org](http://lcr.yardley.org) and materials from [Biographyonline.com](http://Biographyonline.com) which have this Citation: Pettinger, Tejvan. "Famous people of the Reformation", Oxford, [www.biographyonline.net](http://www.biographyonline.net), 11th Feb. 2013. Wikipedia and [BBC.co.uk](http://BBC.co.uk) provide additional insight.

#### Some of the most influential people in the Protestant Reformation

The Protestant Reformation refers to the period in the 15th Century, when some Christians broke away from the Roman Catholic church, beginning new Protestant movements. These new religious movements tended to stress the importance of the Bible and believed Salvation could be gained directly from God and not through the intermediary of a Priest. Pre-Reformation reformers (these are personalities who opposed some of the aspects of Roman Catholic Doctrines and liturgies before Martin Luther appeared on the scene).

Meister Eckhart (1260-1327) a Germany mystic, theologian, and philosopher. Eckhart was not directly related to the Reformation. However, his radical sermons which spoke of man's direct contact with the Divine were influential in later shaping Martin Luther's thinking. Eckhart was tried for heresy for his unconventional philosophy.

John Wycliffe (1330-1384) translated some of first versions of Bible into English. Wycliffe was an early critic of the Papacy and clerical power. He placed greater emphasis on scripture advocating Bible centered Christianity. His followers were known as Lollards and were precursors to Martin Luther.

Jan Hus (1369-1415) Hus was a Czech theologian who propagated the radical reforms of Wycliffe and was a key figure in the later Protestant reformation. Hus criticized many aspects of Church teachings and he was burnt at the stake for heresy. However, his teachings and martyrdom spread through Czech lands creating a strong reformation movement.

Johannes Gutenberg (1400-1468) Gutenberg was the inventor of movable type printing in Europe. This started a printing revolution; which enabled the spread of printed works across Europe. Also, produced the 'Gutenberg Bible'. This invention was critical in enabling the spread of the printed works of the Protestant reformation.

### Contemporaries of Martin Luther

Desiderius Erasmus (1466-1536) Erasmus was a Catholic priest and noted scholar. He was a significant figure of the Renaissance and preached religious tolerance. Although he remained a Catholic all his life, he wanted to see the Church reform and his ideas proved influential in the Reformation and the development of Protestantism.

Huldrych Zwingli (1484-1531) A principal figure in the Reformation in Switzerland and Europe. Zwingli proposed many reforms to the Catholic Church, based on the primacy of the Bible and influenced by his Renaissance learning and the works of Erasmus.

John Calvin (1509-1564) French Protestant reformer. Calvin broke from the Roman Catholic Church in 1530. He wrote influential Christian works, which supported the Protestant reformation. He also introduced a new liturgy and form of church government. His theological teachings formed a basis of Reformed, Congregational, and Presbyterian churches.

Lcr.yardley.org adds this further insight into the man John Calvin and his theology: "John Calvin, a major figure of Reformed Theology. Reformed theology, whose greatest representative is John Calvin, joined the Lutherans in teaching the three solas of Protestantism: Sola Fide (Faith alone) means that we are

never justified by works. Sola Gratia (Grace alone) means we can never do anything to merit God's acceptance. And Sola Scriptura (Scripture alone) means that no beliefs are necessary to accept unless they are in the Bible.

At the center of Calvin's theology is "adoption," which means God elects to make some people his children by the grace of Christ. What is new in Calvin's doctrine of predestination is that believers can and should know they are among the elect, predestined for salvation, so they can be certain even in this life they are already saved for eternity. While Calvin taught that God predestines some people for damnation as well as salvation; later Calvinists incorporated this doctrine of "double predestination" into a system of eternal divine decrees. The Synod of Dordt (1618 - 1619) formulated the classic doctrines of Five-Point Calvinism, traditionally symbolized by the acronym TULIP.

This word stood for the concepts of: Total depravity, Unconditional election, Limited atonement, Irresistible grace, and Perseverance of the saints. Total depravity is a doctrine shared with Lutherans, while unconditional election and irresistible grace are shared with Augustine. The Calvinist doctrine of perseverance of the saints, however, stems from Calvin's radical innovation in the doctrine of predestination, teaching that believers can know they are eternally saved because they will persevere to the end in faith. The doctrine of limited atonement is the most controversial of the five. It is found nowhere outside of Calvinism, and even some Calvinists disagree with it. To perhaps better appreciate the diversity of the Reformation here are a few words about the Synod of Dordt. It was convened by Dutch Reformed pastors and theologians to formalize reformed thought. But, much like the council of Nicea it was also convened to reject Arminianism.

**Arminianism.** This is a Protestant theology in the Reformed tradition (named for Jacob Arminius) which assigned a larger role to free will in salvation. While rejected by the Calvinists and Dutch Reformed movement, it became widespread among both Anglicans and Baptists and was wholeheartedly adopted by John Wesley and the Methodists. As noted before, Lutherans and Reformed theologians disagreed about the presence of Christ's body in the Eucharist or Lord's Supper; Lutherans arguing for the doctrine of real presence and the Reformed insisting that the body of Christ was not physically enclosed in the bread. Calvin attempted to close this gap, but could never accept the Lutheran insistence that even unbelievers receive Christ's body in the Supper. In terms of theology, Luther and Calvin were often in disagreement, but Calvin's theology was a major impetus in the development of the Protestant forensic doctrine of justification. What this means is that God declares sinners righteous when they believe. Think of the line from the hymn Amazing Grace, "How blessed did that grace appear the hour I first believed" and you can better grasp the concept. For all Protestant theologians, the foundation of all the benefits received by faith is union with Christ."

Jacobus Arminius[a] (October 10, 1560 - October 19, 1609), the Latinized name of the Dutch theologian Jakob Hermanszoon from the Protestant Reformation period, served from 1603 as professor in theology at the University of Leiden. He wrote many books and treatises on theology, and his views became the basis of Arminianism and the Dutch Remonstrant movement. Following his death, his challenge to the Reformed standard, the Belgic Confession, provoked ample discussion at the Synod of Dort, which crafted the five points of Calvinism in response to Arminius's teaching (Credit: Wikipedia).

## Other offspring of the Reformation

### The early Anabaptists

Lcr.yardley.org notes: "The Anabaptists, meaning "re-baptizers," broke from the Reformed tradition in Switzerland when they could see no grounds for infant baptism in scripture. For the Anabaptists, baptism was only for adult believers, a mark of their commitment to living a radically new life in Christian community. Some Anabaptists were persecuted as dangerous radicals- some of them were. They took over the Dutch city of Münster by force. But after they were slaughtered, the movement took a pacifist turn lead by Menno Simons, after whom the Mennonites are named. Other strands of the radical reformation included the Rationalist Socinians, who rejected the doctrine of the Trinity, and spiritualists such as Sebastian Franck who denied any need for an institutional church. Other mainline Protestant denominations which sprang from the Anabaptist line are the Baptists, Amish and Mennonites as previously mentioned."

### English Reformation

The Reformation was largely a fringe movement except in Germany and selected cities of Europe such as Geneva and the smaller nations. This situation was to dramatically change when the English got into the fray in a very strange twist of history: desire of King Henry VIII to re-marry when his wife Catherine of Aragon was unable to bear him a male heir. Because she was related to the influential couple in the Catholic world, King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella of Spain who were highly favored in Rome and because of Catholic doctrine, the Pope refused to grant annulment of their marriage. The reaction of King Henry VIII based on advice from his counsellors changed the course of history. He defied the pope and 'nationalized all of its assets (spiritual and economic) to create the Church of England of which he was the final authority. In essence, Church and State, were forged into a permanent union. That is how the Church of England became an 'Established' entity with key Bishops automatically members of the House of Lords in Parliament. A Book of Common Prayer was compiled as a national heritage for all (Salvation did not matter in the theology that ensued).

Let us see what biographyonline.com says of some of the key personalities in that saga:

Henry VIII (1491 - 1547) King from 1509 to 1547. Henry VIII split the Church of England from Rome, leading to the rise of Protestantism in England. He dissolved the monasteries and reduced the power of the church.

Anne Boleyn (1501- 1536) 2nd wife to Henry VIII. Anne Boleyn was influential in forcing Henry VIII to break with Rome and set up the Church of England. Anne Boleyn was former Mistress-in-waiting to Queen Catherine. She was crowned Queen in 1533, but after failing to produce a male heir, Boleyn was executed in 1536.

Thomas Cromwell (1485 - 1540) Right hand man of King Henry VIII. Cromwell pushed for Henry to break with Rome and set up the Church of England. Cromwell also led the dissolution of the monasteries and attack on the old religious traditions of the Catholic faith.

Thomas Cranmer (1489 - 1556) Archbishop of Canterbury during reign of Henry VIII, Edward VI and Mary I. Cranmer was a key figure in the English Reformation, reducing the influence of the Holy See and writing an English Common Book of Prayer

Queen Elizabeth I (1533 - 1603) Queen from (1558 to 1603). She reverted England back to Protestantism after the brief reign of her Catholic sister Mary. Despite great tensions, she largely avoided the descent into religious strife. She also led her country to a famous defeat of the (Catholic) Spanish Armada when England looked vulnerable to invasion.

Apart from John Wycliffe and Johannes Gutenberg, another Publisher who played a critical role in the Reformation was:

William Tyndale (1494 - 1536) was one of the first persons to print the Bible in English. He worked on translating the Bible into English even when it was deemed to be an illegal act. He was executed for blasphemy after years of avoiding capture. His English Bible was ironically then taken up by Henry VIII after he broke from the Roman Catholic Church.

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:** Carey, Phillip, *The History of Christian Theology*, teaching Company, Chantilly, Virginia, 2008. Kolbe, Robert and Timothy Wengert, *The Book of Concord, The Confessions of the Evangelical Lutheran Church*, Fortress Press, Minneapolis, 2000. McManners, John (Ed.), *The Oxford History of Christianity*, Oxford Press, Oxford, 1993. Mead, Frank S., Samuel S. Hill, Craig D. Atwood, *Handbook of Denominations in the United States*, Abingdon Press, Nashville, TN, 1985. Skrade, Kristofer, *The Lutheran Handbook*, Augsburg Fortress, Minneapolis, 2005.

Lcr.yardley.org has details of other off-springs of Anglicanism: The Puritans, Baptists, and Quakers who played key roles in spread of the gospel and colonization of America:

### Puritans

Anglican theology, which is the theology of the English Reformation, retains some Catholic sacramental and ceremonial practices (The Book of Common Prayer) but is based on a largely Reformed theological foundation (confessional document 39 Articles). For this reason, it is often called the *via media* or middle way between Catholicism and Protestantism. The Puritans began as Anglicans who desired a more thoroughly Reformed church, divested of the "popish ceremonies" and devoted more seriously to biblical preaching and effective church discipline. They disagreed about church government, most opposed the Episcopal government of the Church of England, and a majority advocated Presbyterianism, but there were also influential Congregationalists, including those who founded the New England colonies.

Wikipedia adds that "The Puritans were a group of English Reformed Protestants in the 16th and 17th centuries who sought to "purify" the Church of England from its "Catholic" practices, maintaining that the Church of England was only partially reformed." They played a major role in the birth of America because the Pilgrim Fathers set off from England to America in search of liberty from the stifling religious atmosphere where the Crown played a key role in regulating religion. Here is how history.com states it:

“Puritanism was a religious reform movement that arose within the Church of England in the late sixteenth century. Under siege from church and crown, it sent an offshoot in the third and fourth decades of the seventeenth century to the northern English colonies in the New World—a migration that laid the foundation for the religious, intellectual, and social order of New England. Puritanism, however, was not only a historically specific phenomenon coincident with the founding of New England; it was also a way of being in the world—a style of response to lived experience—that has reverberated through American life ever since.”

## Baptists

The first Baptists were Puritan Separatists early in the 17th century, who rejected infant baptism because they believed the church was a covenanted community. Key issues for Baptists include whether any kind of baptism outside a Baptist church is valid; whether those who are not members of the covenanted community should be admitted to communion; whether there is such a thing as a non-Baptist church and, if not, whether it is possible if there ever was a time that the Baptist church did not exist.

The official website of the Baptist Union in United Kingdom provides this interesting insight into this movement which has also played a key role in development of America:

“In this Baptist family everybody is equal, for everybody has a part to play in the service of God. There is no hierarchy of bishops or priests exercising authority over their members. Equality of status, however, does not mean that all have the same role. Each local Baptist church appoints its own leaders, or ministers, to have particular responsibility for preaching, teaching, and pastoral care. Working alongside these ministers are also deacons, who together with the minister(s) form the leadership team of the local Baptist church. Baptists are grass-roots people, with a particular emphasis on the local church. These local churches are self-governing and self-supporting, ranging in size from twenty or so members to many hundreds. Although each Baptist church is an independent entity, Baptists nonetheless have always believed in associating with one another - and so the churches come together in regional, national, and international spheres to promote and support the fellowship of Baptists everywhere.

## The Quakers

Later in the 17th century, the Quakers developed a theology and church practice based on turning to the inner light of the Spirit as the true source of revelation. Like the Baptists, their rejection of the claims of the state church led to their persecution and their advocacy of freedom of religion for all.

Founded in England as a protest of the established Anglican Church, the belief system of the Quakers is best appreciated with this piece of information from Wikipedia about its founder, George Fox. Among his ideas were:

- Rituals can be safely ignored, as long as one experiences a true spiritual conversion.

- The qualification for ministry is given by the Holy Spirit, not by ecclesiastical study. This implies that anyone has the right to minister, assuming the Spirit guides them, including women and children.
- God "dwelleth in the hearts of his obedient people": religious experience is not confined to a church building. Indeed, Fox refused to apply the word "church" to a building, using instead the name "steeple-house", a usage maintained by many Quakers today. Fox would just as soon worship in fields and orchards, believing that God's presence could be felt anywhere.
- Though Fox used the Bible to support his views, Fox reasoned that, because God was within the faithful, believers could follow their own inner guide rather than rely on a strict reading of Scripture or the word of clerics.
- Fox also made no clear distinction between Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

He was so put off by how Religion had been confined to 'Church buildings' that the formal title of his movement is the Society of Friends or the Religious Society of Friends. One of its members, William Penn is regarded as founder of the City of Philadelphia and owner of the territory now known as State of Pennsylvania and the areas of lower Delaware (they were given to him by the English Crown to settle debts owed to his father, Admiral Penn). He is the unsung grandfather of the United States of America.

#### Review Questions

1. Please share what you understood from the lives and works of any two other reformers.

## Chapter 57

### Outcomes of the Reformation Part 1 Positives Successes

At this point in our study, we need to step back and allow Holy Spirit to cast a strong beam of light on 500 years of history since 1517 to appreciate the impact of the Protestant Reformation sparked by the Ninety-Five Theses posted on the door of All Saints Church at Wittenberg by Martin Luther. We will consider fruits of the Reformation considered as successful or positive outcomes.

#### Spiritual

The very first port of call in this exercise is the spiritual arena. Picture Europe 500 years ago. It was a land covered with gross darkness which came through two main sources: Idolatry of unconverted people groups or the overbearing presence of the Roman Catholic Church. With its ecclesiastical system, the pyramid of authority led all the way to Rome where the pope sat as Supreme Pontiff with the power to do and undo. Most of the popes used and abused their powers to preside over a 'conquered' people who lived as vassals to the church. Fear of the pope, Archbishop, Bishop, and Parish priest rather than Elohim was the beginning of wisdom for both nobles and commoners. The oppression was palpable. The methods of extracting money from the people were exacting as the abuse of Indulgences for fund-raising revealed.

Amid this gross darkness, Elohim was up to something which appeared local at first but was to later burst loose on the world scene: Reveal Himself and His Salvation by Grace to a handful of humans with the capacity to be vessels through which He would open the eyes of multitudes and pull down the grip of mystery Babylon. Without being exhaustive, let us capture some of the most outstanding fruits of the Protestant Reformation which was flagged off on that fateful day, October 31, 1517.

#### Monopoly of Roman Catholicism was Broken Forever

The way Martin Luther and other Reformers boldly challenged the errors, heresies, and apostasies of the doctrines/dogmas and traditions of men, which made up the belief system and some aspects of the liturgies of Roman Catholicism in their days, created a massive new reality in Europe. That reality was the monopoly of Roman Catholicism as sole (and official) religion of the continent was permanently broken. Starting with the people of Germany and stretching on to Switzerland, other nations and eventually Britain, it became obvious people could access Elohim and gain the satisfaction of doing so outside of the confines of the Roman Church.

#### Sole Authority of the Papacy Way Broken

In the same way, the former perception and understanding that the pope was the sole vicar of Jesus and ultimate authority over all matters of faith were broken. Nowhere was this dramatically demonstrated with exponential results than in England. When King Henry VIII pulled the nation out of Roman Catholicism, he denied the pope one of his prized Jewels! The king went on to 'nationalize' the church to create Church of England, confiscated its assets and closed Roman Catholic Monasteries and Abbeys.

## Salvation by Grace through Faith Became Mainstreamed Again

With the formal advent of Roman Catholicism between 311 to 381 AD the Church had successfully re-defined the Gospel of Yeshua and the Kingdom into a set of beliefs out of sync with the New Covenant scriptures. In the same way, rituals to be performed ceaselessly within Church buildings had effectively snuffed out any prospect of a personal relationship with Elohim by church goers. It was religion at its worst! The remnant who were preserved by Grace was a tiny minority who met in homes and nondescript places to avoid detection and persecution. In the public space, Rome reigned supreme alone over the people. In the article by Robert Wilde titled 'A Beginner's Guide to the Protestant Reformation' published on the website of thoughtco.com, this powerful background to the Reformation is presented:

"In the early 16th century western and central Europe followed the Latin Church headed by the Pope. While religion permeated the lives of everyone in Europe – even if the poor focused on religion as a way to improve day to day issues and the rich on improving the afterlife – there was widespread dissatisfaction with many aspects of the church: At its bloated bureaucracy, perceived arrogance, avarice and abuses of power. There was also widespread agreement that the church needed to be reformed, to restore it to a purer and more accurate form. While the church was certainly vulnerable to change, there was little agreement on what should be done.

A massively fragmented reform movement, with attempts from the Pope at the top to priests at the bottom, was ongoing, but attacks tended to focus on only one aspect at a time, not the whole church and the local nature led only to local success.

Perhaps the main bar to change was the belief that the church still offered the only route to salvation. What was needed for mass change was a theologian/argument which could convince a mass of both people and priests they did not need the established church to save them, allowing reform to run unchecked by previous loyalties. Martin Luther presented just such a challenge."

When Martin Luther was illuminated to understand all his exertions to find peace with Elohim were works of flesh, unacceptable to him, the words of Romans 1:17 set off a set of light bulbs whose end was that Salvation is only possible as a gift of Grace through Faith in the completed work of Yeshua, Jesus on the Cross

**Romans 1:17 (KJV)** *17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.*

With time, he and various reformers were to be liberated from religion and religiosity by such other scriptures like this:

**Ephesians 2:4-8 (KJV)** *4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:*

**Hebrews 10:38 (KJV)** *38 Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.*

In other words, Salvation by Grace through Faith in Yeshua, Jesus which was believed and practiced by only a tiny remnant suddenly became a truth known by and accepted by many more people in the public space without fear of persecution by Rome! The Remnant found a home and acceptance in the mainstream of life.

## Birth and Growth of the Protestant Movement

Though largely localized to Wittenberg at first, the events of 1517 were the beginning of a spiritual cultural shift later branded as the Protestant Movement or Protestantism. It spread across Germany and due to the acute persecution Martin Luther faced, became a known fact throughout the Roman Catholic world. By involving the Emperor, the protest of Martin Luther became known across the Roman Empire. In his article *A Beginners guide to the Protestant Reformation*, Robert Wilde provides this snapshot of outcomes of the Reformation:

Brief Summary of Reformation Changes:

“Souls were saved without the cycle of penitence and confession (which was now sinful), but by faith, learning and the grace of God. Scripture was the sole authority, to be taught in the vernacular (the local languages of the poor). A new church structure: A community of believers, focused around a preacher, needing no central hierarchy. The two sacraments mentioned in the scriptures were kept, albeit altered but the other five were downgraded.

In short, the elaborate, costly, organized church with often absent priests was replaced by austere prayer, worship, and local preaching, striking a chord with lay people and theologians like.”

With time, other local/City or national Protest movements arose across Europe. General estimates of the number of Protestants world-wide range from 800 million (by Wikipedia) to about 1 Billion souls worldwide. Unfortunately, this includes all ‘non-Catholic’ Churches which have some form of belief in Jesus but do not embrace Salvation by Grace through Faith (including Jehovah Witnesses; Mormons, and Anglicans). From a quantity perspective, this has been truly an exponential growth. In the same way, there are several nations which are predominantly Protestant rather than Roman Catholic worldwide.

## Social, Political and Economic Outcomes

### 1. Personal Liberty was unleashed and Education was liberalized

During the Medieval Times, Europe under the suzerainty of Roman Catholic church was marked by superstition, mass ignorance, and epidemics which decimated the population from time to time. During those days, people were programmed to accept every word of authority as true; very few people, mainly children of nobles had access to higher education with most universities owned by the Roman Catholic Church. Scientific thoughts were repressed. Coming out of this darkness was a new wave of light that was the Renaissance. It was marked by inquisitiveness, scientific inquiry, holding authorities to account and desire for personal liberty. Here is how History.com presented the Protestant Reformation within the context of the Renaissance:

“The Protestant Reformation was the 16th-century religious, political, intellectual and cultural upheaval that splintered Catholic Europe, setting in place the structures and beliefs that would define the continent in the modern era. In northern and central Europe, reformers like Martin Luther, John Calvin,

and Henry VIII challenged papal authority and questioned the Catholic Church's ability to define Christian practice. They argued for a religious and political redistribution of power into the hands of Bible- and pamphlet-reading pastors and princes. The disruption triggered wars, persecutions, and the so-called Counter-Reformation, the Catholic Church's delayed but forceful response to the Protestants."

Knowing the power of education, various Protestant reformers invested heavily in both secular and spiritual educational institutions. The result was well-educated people and ministers of the gospel in cities and nations with strong Protestant roots. In his assessment of the effect of the Reformation on the policy and social systems of Europe, Robert Wilde had this to say in his article we previously quoted:

"REFORMED CHURCHES FORM:

The reformation movement was adopted by lay people and powers, merging with their political and social aspirations to produce sweeping changes on everything from the personal level – people converting – to the highest reaches of government, where towns, provinces and whole kingdoms officially and centrally introduced the new church, even barring the old across.

Government action was needed as the reformed churches had no central authority to disband the old church and install the new order. The process was haphazard – with much regional variation – and carried out over decades.

Historians still debate the reasons why people, and the governments who reacted to their wishes, took up the 'Protestant' cause (as the reformers became known), but a combination is likely, involving seizing land and power from the old church, genuine belief in the new message, 'flattery' by lay people at being involved in religious debate for the first time and in their language, deflecting dissent onto the church and freedom from old church restrictions.

The Reformation did not occur bloodlessly. There was a military conflict in the Empire before a settlement allowing old church and Protestant worship was passed, while France was riven by the 'Wars of Religion', killing tens of thousands. Even in England, where a Protestant church was established, both sides were persecuted as the old church Queen Mary ruled in between Protestant monarchs."

2. Role in creating a healthy work ethic which under-girded the Industrial Revolution and advancement in all spheres of endeavor

With better education and personal access to Elohim, the peoples of protestant communities, cities, and nations had their creative minds unleashed. The results were:

- Better standards of life
- Greater desire for self-actualization
- Better work ethic. For most Protestants, work was a sacred duty to both Elohim as well as a means to be responsible for the family.
- Better productivity in the work place. Even till today, citizens of Catholic nations of Europe work less than those in Protestant nations

- Overall, the economy fared better in Protestant nations than in Roman Catholic ones. By the time of the Industrial Revolution, this liberated attitude attuned them to reap the massive opportunities offered by the invention of machines.
- Solidarity. Because they were persecuted, Protestants exercised solidarity with each other. Here is how History.com records this reality when applied to Geneva, the Protestant theocracy of the era:

“Calvin’s Geneva became a hotbed for Protestant exiles, and his doctrines quickly spread to Scotland, France, Transylvania and the Low Countries, where Dutch Calvinism became a religious and economic force for the next 400 years.”

3. The legacy of the Reformation. Speaking of the legacy, let us consider this brief summary by History.com:

“But the Reformation’s positive repercussions can be seen in the intellectual and cultural flourishing it inspired on all sides of the schism—in the strengthened universities of Europe, the Lutheran church music of J.S. Bach, the baroque altarpieces of Pieter Paul Rubens and even the capitalism of Dutch Calvinist merchants.”

#### 4. Roman Catholic Counter Reformation

Ironically, the Protestant Reformation also had a positive effect on the Roman Catholic Church. After more than one millennium in which it exercised absolute power, it dawned on the popes and the other leaders, that pretending nothing was wrong would be self-destructive. Partly to stem the massive outflow of people in search of spiritual awakening, the Roman Catholic Church launched the Counter Reformation. Again, let us recourse to History.com for a snapshot of this ingenious attempt to truncate the Protestant spirit:

“The Catholic Church was slow to respond systematically to the theological and publicity innovations of Luther and the other reformers. The Council of Trent, which met off and on from 1545 through 1563, articulated the Church’s answer to the problems that triggered the Reformation and to the reformers themselves.

The Catholic Church of the Counter-Reformation era grew more spiritual, more literate and more educated. New religious orders, notably the Jesuits, combined rigorous spirituality with a globally minded intellectualism, while mystics such as Teresa of Avila injected new passion into the older orders. Inquisitions, both in Spain and in Rome, were reorganized to fight the threat of Protestant heresy.”

5. Fresh Renewals. While mainstream Protestant movements spiritually atrophied with time, Holy Spirit never ceased to visit the Church. The results were often manifested through fresh insights into the Holy Scriptures; hearts ablaze for Elohim; spirits empowerment of Holy Spirit and a new zeal for fulfilling the Great Commission. Some prominent among such visitations are:

- Evangelicalism
- Pentecostalism- After several waves of revival in England and America, the Azusa Street Revival in Los Angeles, California in 1906 became the unquestionable foundation for fresh visitations of Holy Spirit. It is particularly significant because it was the first time

that the mantle of leading a move of Elohim rested on a son of Ham, William Seymour. Unfortunately, racism reared its ugly head and the brethren split along racial lines into:

Church of God in Christ - for 'Blacks'

Assemblies of God Church - for 'Whites'

- Charismatic movement
- Word of Faith Movement
- Mass Evangelism with Healing, Miracles, Signs, and Wonders
- The Holiness Movement
- The Prosperity Movement
- Prophetic Movement
- Fivefold Restoration Movement
- The Full Gospel Movement
- Pseudo-Kingdom Movement – (those who believe the Kingdom is greater than King Yeshua. They advocate that saints should preach the Kingdom, not Yeshua!)
- The Mega Church Movement

#### Review Questions

1. Please summarize any 3 of the successes of the Protestant Reformation you consider most outstanding.
2. Please write an essay of up to 3-5 pages maximum on item #.9 Fresh Renewals (1-12) describing the various moves of Elohim.

## Chapter 58

### Outcomes Part 2 Negatives Part 1

The positive effects of the Reformation are well known and publicly celebrated. Unfortunately, the Church has been strangely unwillingly to forensically examine 500 years of the Protestant Reformation to discover its failings. Without identifying failings of that massive paradigm shift, heirs of the Protestant Movement have lived like Ostrich with heads to the sand! The result is mistakes of the past have been routinely repeated again and again. In a sense, this scripture is a prophetic challenge to the Church which emerged out of the events of 1517:

**Deuteronomy 1:6 (KJV)** *6 The Lord our God spake unto us in Horeb, saying, Ye have dwelt long enough in this mount:*

With the Lord speaking expressly through various vessels that the return of King Yeshua is near, the time has come for the Protestant Movement to consider the Mirror of both the Word and History to locate the spots, wrinkles/traditions of humans and other negative features of its various theologies, liturgies and practices/traditions. When such honest assessments are made at prompting of Holy Spirit, the Church will be ready for its Groom. That is why the Lord is unleashing the power of the Word:

**Ephesians 5:25-27 (KJV)** *25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; 26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*

Clear Negative Outcomes, which represent failings of the Reformation include these:

#### **#.1. The Protestant Reformation of 1517 did not deal with the Root cause of the need to come out of Mystery Babylon.**

One would have expected a Reformer like Martin Luther who branded the Roman Catholic Church as Mystery Babylon to opt for a separate existence of the movement he led from the government of his day. After all, our Lord had clearly advocated in John 17 that His Church would be in the world but not of it. In the Book of Revelation, the Lord had clearly warned His Church about the danger posed by Mystery Babylon and advocated a 'coming out' of her:

**Revelation 18:1-5 (KJV)** *1 And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. 2 And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and she holdeth of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. 3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. 4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. 5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.*

Ultimately, the Reformation was not a fundamental repudiation of Christian Religion as practiced over a thousand years by Rome. It was rather an attempt to change some issues that Martin Luther found

repugnant in the Roman Catholic Church. In essence, the axe was not laid at the root but rather, branches were lobbed off while the main tree remained! Right from the inception of the Reformation and all through the first and second waves, the spirit of Babylon had access to creep in and eventually dominate the Church. This was manifested in two broad ways. Those who desire to limit the description of Mystery Babylon to only the Roman Catholic Church need to consider the reality that in describing that entity, there is a prophetic hint that it would bear offspring!

**Revelation 17:1-6 (KJV)** *1 And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: 2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. 3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. 4 And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: 5 And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth. 6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.*

The phrase 'Mother of Harlots' clearly means that this apostate religious system which deceives people to co-mingle with the world would have its roots in the 'Mother Church'! Let us examine some telltale signs of this spiritual malaise.

#### i. Political patronage of the Nobles

Right from the beginning, in fleeing the long tentacles of Rome, Martin Luther sought protection from Frederick the Elector of Saxony. His patronage was cited in the letter of Luther to Archbishop Albrecht of Mainz. That patron status continued for a long time.

#### 2. Protestantism became established: union of Church and State

Various nobles and nations who despised the avarice and oppressiveness of the Roman Catholic Church veered the other way to embrace and make the Protestant Churches their 'established' or State Church. By such marriage of Church and State, the spirit of the world took the upper hand over time while the Church validated all human frailties of those in authority.

**Germany.** Eventually, what Luther established as a protest against Rome – Lutheranism became the official religion of Germany. Because of the wide acceptance of Lutheranism as by nobles and commoners of the Germans, the Treaty of Augsburg of 1555 guaranteed to both Roman Catholics and Germans that they could worship freely as they chose.

The sum total of what we hear by Holy Spirit in the Word is that practically speaking, Martin Luther successfully took the Church out of the hands of her former husband, Rome only to wed her with a new husband, Germany!

**Geneva, Switzerland.** John Calvin established an autocratic theocracy in Geneva, making it the 'holy City' of Europe. Regarded by many as the New Jerusalem, it was to be his appointed laboratory to prove that when Christians are in authority, righteousness would prevail. Unfortunately, the Theocratic

government of ruling priests he established did not guarantee long lasting righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit. This state of affairs will be manifested in the earth realm during the millennial reign of Yeshua, Jesus. From this resource: [jaesblogspot.blogspot.co.uk](http://jaesblogspot.blogspot.co.uk) is this insightful perspective of Calvin's Geneva:

"He then turned the city of Geneva into such strict and lawful atmosphere, that it was renamed as "City of God". Even though Calvinism suggests an excellent teaching of trusting God and following the rules, it truly shows uncomfortable, dictator-like atmosphere. Therefore, to me, not only this religion is visualized as a "jail" located in Washington D.C., but also it represents a negative way of reformation.

**England.** As noted in an earlier chapter, King Henry VIII was not driven by the need for religious purity when he left the Roman Catholic Church. It was the refusal of the pope to grant him divorce which led him to nationalize Roman Catholic Church assets in England. The new Protestant religion he created: Church of England/Anglicanism became the 'Established Church of his realm. It has been so ever since with Salvation by Grace an exception, rather than the norm in many parishes.

This tendency of seeking the union of Church and State subsists till today in various forms. Whereas the Pilgrim Fathers sought to escape the stifling effects of the State on the practice of their faith, their offspring did not demur to desire union of Church and State during the Constitutional Conventions which gave rise to the United States of America. Despite clear language of the Constitution which declares America as a nonreligious State, many Church leaders hold onto any straw of reference to biblical passages to insist that America is a Christian nation.

## **#.2. Anti-Semitism**

Another major Negative outcome of the Protestant Reformation of Martin Luther was the spirit of anti-Semitism. Anti-Semitism is the spiritual and social sin of hating the Jews as a people group because of who they are. Various people are inspired to hate the Jews/Hebrews for various reasons. For some, the root is jealousy over their distinguished accomplishments in Banking, the Media, Medicine, education, the Professions and in real estate. For adherents of the various religions on earth, that hatred is predicated on their election as a chosen people of Elohim through His covenant with Abraham

**Genesis 12:1-3 (KJV)** *1 Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: 2 And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: 3 And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.*

In Genesis 17 Elohim established this special Covenant with Abraham and his seed by the rite of Circumcision of all males.

Let us review this material from the [luther.de](http://luther.de) website concerning the later years of Martin Luther. The Lord has preserved records of this controversial part of his illustrious life for the remnant of the end time to know that it is easy to stumble when we try to use the logic of the human minds to comprehend spiritual things. It is ironic that the Book of Romans was the key part of the Holy Scriptures from where illumination of Truth came to Martin Luther that we are justified by Faith and made righteous in the sight of Elohim by His Grace, not our works Romans 1:17.

Unfortunately, this great expositor of the Holy Scriptures did not diligently study and understand Romans chapters 9, 10, 11 which dealt with the temporary falling away of the Hebrews/Jews as the very basis of which a door of opportunity was opened for the Gentiles – including him - to come into the Kingdom! Let us consider this insight gleaned from the website of luther.de

“Luther's Last Years of Life (1540-46)

Luther's relationship to people with different beliefs, especially the Jews, deteriorated drastically during these years. His 1523 work *Jesus was born a Jew* showed a conciliatory attitude; however, in later years the aging reformer sentenced all who did not want to convert to his beliefs. The strongly anti-Semitic work *Jews and their Lies* (1543) came out during this period.

Luther continued to lead the Reformation in its fight against its enemies even in the last years of his life. With his 1545 work *Against the Papacy at Rome Founded by the Devil!* he performed his last blow against the Roman Church.”

Not all are convinced that Luther hated the Jews of his day. In an article in *Christianity Today* titled ‘Was Martin Luther Anti-Semitic’, Eric W. Gritsch writes:

“Set fire to their synagogues or schools,” Martin Luther recommended in *On the Jews and Their Lies*. Jewish houses should “be razed and destroyed,” and Jewish “prayer books and Talmudic writings, in which such idolatry, lies, cursing, and blasphemy are taught, [should] be taken from them.” In addition, “their rabbis [should] be forbidden to teach on pain of loss of life and limb.” Still, this wasn’t enough.

Luther also urged that “safe-conduct on the highways be abolished completely for the Jews,” and that “all cash and treasure of silver and gold be taken from them.” What Jews could do was to have “a flail, an ax, a hoe, a spade” put into their hands so “young, strong Jews and Jewesses” could “earn their bread by the sweat of their brow.”

These fierce comments have puzzled and embarrassed Christians who otherwise admire the Reformer. And they have led to charges that Luther was “one of the ‘church fathers’ of anti-Semitism.” More seriously, Luther’s attacks have been seen as paving the way for Hitler.

Was Luther anti-Semitic? How should we understand his words?

“Receive Jews Cordially”

In 1523, Luther accused Catholics of being unfair to Jews and treating them “as if they were dogs,” thus making it difficult for Jews to convert. “I would request and advise that one deal gently with them [the Jews],” he wrote. “If we really want to help them, we must be guided in our dealings with them not by papal law but by the law of Christian love. We must receive them cordially, and permit them to trade and work with us, hear our Christian teaching,” Culled from *Christianity Today*

We have no idea whether this exhortation came from the heart or was rather a means to gain their trust for the gospel to be preached.

Two major attempts to destroy Jews illustrate how the vileness of Antisemitism can prompt savage actions against them. Note that the first was during the Roman Catholic era (about 411 years before the Protestant Reformation while the second was in 1941-45 about 424 years later.

## **A. Horrors of the ‘Bloody Crusades’**

About 411 years before the Protestant Reformation, the Roman Catholic Church manifested its anti-Semitic roots when Pope Urban II inaugurated the Crusades in 1096 to seize Jerusalem from Muslims. Very few foresaw the extreme manifestation of wickedness against Jews that was to follow. Chabad.org documents two particularly gory chapters of that ugly patch of 'Christian history worthy of consideration and representational repentance:

"The First Crusade started out from France in 1095. To remain in the good graces of the Crusaders, French Jews supplied funds and food for the journey. However, when some of the Crusaders reached Germany, their mood changed drastically. Among many Crusaders the feeling grew rapidly that before they attacked the heathens in far-off Palestine, there were infidels much closer to home with whom they should contend.

In May 1096, in a period of four weeks, frenzied bands of Crusaders struck the Jewish communities of Speyer, Worms, Mainz, and Cologne. The Jews were offered the option of conversion to Christianity or death; the vast majority chose the path of Kiddush HaShem, sanctification of G-d's name. Rather than submit to forced conversion, in many cases, Jews killed their wives and children, and then themselves. In the words of one of the Kinnot recited on Tisha B'Av: "Who can see it and not cry/As the child is slaughtered, the father recites the Shema/ Has such been seen or heard before?" Estimates of the toll taken on the Jewish communities range from 3,000 to 10,000 deaths." Undaunted, unstoppable, the Crusaders conquered Eretz Israel, reaching Jerusalem in 1099. Once there, they gathered all the Jews of Jerusalem into the central synagogue and set it afire. Other Jews, who had climbed to the roof of Al-Aksa mosque on the Temple Mount, were caught and beheaded. The Crusader leader, Godfrey of Bouillon, wrote to the Pope, "If you want to know what has been done with the enemy found in Jerusalem...our people had their vile blood up to the knees of their horses." After this victory, the Crusaders retained control of Jerusalem for close to 100 years." The Crusades set a dangerous precedent -- the rise of organized, popular, anti-Jewish uprisings. Although both the Pope and the local authorities were generally opposed to the Crusaders' excesses in Germany, these leaders' hostility to Jews caused them to remain apathetic to Jewish suffering, thus they generally did not intervene. After the First Crusade, instances of mob persecution occurred regularly. Therefore, the Crusades can be seen as the source for much of subsequent Christian persecution. In keeping with the traditional Jewish viewpoint, that the beginning of a tragedy is noted, the events of the Crusades are commemorated."

Worse was to come – just a few hundred years down the line of history.

### **B. The Holocaust and anti-Semitism across Europe are legacies of that evil seed!**

Words are powerful and can be interpreted negatively by those with lesser qualities. Because Martin Luther did not understand the temporariness of stumbling of Jews/Hebrews and the redemptive role assigned to Gentiles as instruments of reconciling them to Elohim, he sowed an evil seed which was to sprout with deadly consequences. About 424 years after the Reformation and after generations of hatred of Jews in Germany and Europe, the unthinkable happened when Adolf Hitler set out to physically implement an ultimate solution: The Holocaust. By the time the dust settled, over 6 million Jews had been brutally murdered by the Nazis. The DNA of Rome was flowing through veins of its Protestant offspring.

Over the years since then, from Spain to France, England and indeed across most of Europe, prosperous Jews of various generations have suffered internal displacement, exile, and confiscation of their hard-earned properties and financial assets for the crime of being Jews! We need to remember that the Roman Catholic Church practiced a replacement theology through which it was inclined to position itself as inheritor of all the blessings of Abraham as the 'new Israel of God'. The emergent Protestant Church inherited that DNA of Rome and cultured it even more profoundly! Hebraic names of Elohim were eliminated from the psyche of Christians as well as their roots in the covenant with Abraham.

### Consequences of anti-Semitism and the delayed restitution

These and other reasons are why the average Christian of today has no burden for salvation of Jews/Hebrews; most have allowed anti-Semitism to affect their attitude to the State of Israel with many Christians in Europe inclined to support Palestinians and their points of view. The fact that Yeshua was Incarnated in a Jewish Body; that all but one of His 12 Disciples were Jews; that the Alpha Church was largely Jewish for the first Century and that Jews preached and expanded the gospel worldwide from the Day of Pentecost in line with the Acts 1:8 mandate of the Great Commission has been lost on Protestants as it was on Roman Catholics. The idea that the Gentile dominated Christian Church has inherited all the promises of Elohim to the nation of Israel and the Hebraic/Jewish people is truly mind boggling in its heretical bent. Even more startling is the reality that Christians living in the End Times do not deem it needful to understand how unbiblical these views are. For this reason, the representational repentance which is needful to be done for the Sin of Anti-Semitism has tarried. It is a vital obligation that the Remnant owe the Hebraic peoples and nation of Israel to publicly repent of these hurtful doctrines of men which run counter to the full revelation of mind of Elohim expressed in Romans chapters 9, 10 and 11.

### **#.3. The Reformation was spiritually deficient: lacking understanding of full gospel of the Kingdom**

One of the most spectacular successes of the Protestant Reformation was re-discovery of the doctrine and practice of Salvation by Grace through Faith in Yeshua, Jesus. As Yeshua told Nicodemus, Salvation by Grace which leads to the New Birth experience grants humans access to the Kingdom:

*John 3:3-7 (KJV) 3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. 8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.*

*14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: 15 That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. 16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.*

While Yeshua came to pour out His Blood as Atonement for all sinners, those who believe in Him and receive remission of sins become members of the family of Elohim, His sons in the earth realm

**John 1:12 (KJV)** *12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*

**Hebrews 2:10 (KJV)** *10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.*

They become citizens of the Kingdom by submitting to the Sovereign rule of Yeshua Who guides them by His Holy Spirit

**Romans 8:14 (KJV)** *14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

With the Kingdom in their hearts, they are organically connected with all saints of all races, gender, classes, and ages both in the contemporary times, the past, and future as the Kingdom nation bound in love and unity

**John 13:34-35 (KJV)** *34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

**John 17:21 (KJV)** *21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.*

Such Kingdom citizens live in the now for their King, occupying their assigned allotments of influence with gifts and callings vested in them by Yeshua until the day He comes to set up the manifest Kingdom. When He returns, they rule and reign with Him as priests and kings Revelations 1:6; Revelation 5:10; Revelation 20:

Yeshua came to preach this Kingdom message! It was the subject of His first sermon

**Matthew 4:17, 23 (KJV)** *17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.*

It was also the subject of the Sermon on the Mount (Matthew 5, 6 & 7); it was the core of the parables. The miracles, signs, and wonders He performed were all in demonstration of the power of the Kingdom. When Pontius Pilate examined Yeshua, He was bold to assert that His Kingdom is not of this world!

**John 18:36 (KJV)** *36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.*

Neither Martin Luther, John Calvin, Ulrich nor any of the Reformers apparently received the proper and full revelation of the Kingdom nor did they have any in-depth teachings on them. This was a mortal flaw which opened the door for Christian Religion/Denominationalism or Churchianity to arise as chief fruit of the Protestant Reformation! It also laid the foundation for one of the greatest deceptions of all times: the pseudo-kingdom movement to arise in the 21st Century. Whenever truth is hidden or undeclared, room is made for error to arise!

### Review Questions

1. Please summarize each of the three failures/negative outcomes of the Protestant Reformation to the best of your ability. Be brief in each case.

## Chapter 59

### Negative Outcomes of the Protestant Reformation Part 2

Let us continue to examine the negative outcomes of the Reformation. In so doing, let us be gracious to acknowledge that all the reformers of the 16th century and their successors were obviously sincere in seeking to purge Christianity of some of the negative baggage of Roman Catholicism. In their zeal to effect change, however, they may have stumbled in ways that were not obvious to them or which they were convicted of and duly repented.

For this reason, we cannot pass judgment on their intentions or relationships with Elohim. Let us receive therefore from both revelation of Holy Spirit as well as well documented historical realities some more negative outcomes of the Protestant Reformation which represent failings that should not be repeated in this season when the return of the Lord is imminent.

#### **#.4. There was cherry picking of Scriptures involved in various Reformation movements rather than a wholesale return to The Word**

It appears that as each reformer received illumination on specific truths in the Holy Scriptures, they tended to emphasize such with every ounce of strength in them. While this is certainly laudable, a real danger cropped up when they were silent on other equally important doctrines. After over a millennium during which Rome took out the Scriptures from the consciousness of church goers, Christianity needed a completely new direction. There was a need return to the Whole of Scriptures, not part so that Christians will be certain of their personal relationship with Elohim.

**2 Timothy 3:14-17 (KJV)** *14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them; 15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. 16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: 17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

**Caveat:** None of us in this generation is qualified to judge any of the great vessels used by Elohim during the reformation era. However, the Holy Scriptures also enjoin us to examine actions and fruits to discern what to reject from what we need to take on board. That is the safe way to walk on the Narrow Path to eternity!

#### **#.5. Protestantism made room for personal interpretation of the Holy Scriptures. The human mind with its capacity for reasoning went into overdrive, creating doctrines that were imbalanced and not based on the rightful division of the Word.**

Looking back at the Reformation and the centuries which followed, we can discern clearly that ample room was made for personal interpretation of the Holy Scriptures. This ran contrary to the Word itself.

**2 Peter 1:20 (KJV)** *20 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.*

Specific truths of the Holy Scriptures are part of an organic whole. When any truth is discovered, believed and pursued exclusive of the whole, it can lead people astray.

## Examples and explanations

### i. Predestination is in the Bible as these scriptures reveal

**Romans 8:28-30 (KJV)** *28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. 29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. 30 Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.*

**Ephesians 1:4-6 (KJV)** *4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: 5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, 6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.*

At the same time, the matchless love of the Father for ALL sinners, not some is also very much part of the whole scriptures as these scriptures reveal

**John 3:16-19 (KJV)** *16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil*

### Mystery of the will

In the same Holy Scriptures, there is a very strong advancement of the Truth that humans were created with the will through which they make decisions for which they are to be held to account. This started right from the days of Adam when he and Eve disobeyed a clear instruction of Elohim, ignored His warning of the consequences and exercised their will away from His

**Genesis 2:16-17 (KJV)** *16 And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: 17 But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

In Genesis chapter 3 we see how their disobedience led to strong consequences which linger till the end of the age. Throughout the Holy Scriptures, the picture is vividly painted that humans have the responsibility to receive and walk in the Grace to obey Elohim. Those who do otherwise risk censure, spiritual separation and if they remain in sin, eternal separation from Him in hell!

Calvinism results when this balanced consideration of the whole counsel of Scripture regarding Grace is ignored.

### ii. Eternal Security/Hyper-Grace. In the same way, security of the redeemed is guaranteed by Elohim to the degree that neither Satan nor demons nor humans can pluck them out of Yeshua's hands.

**John 10:27-29 (KJV)** *27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: 28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. 29 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.*

This is because theirs is a life hidden in Him

**Colossians 3:1-3 (KJV)** *1 If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. 2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. 3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.*

### **What it means when a saint sins**

However, when a saint, yields to Satan's seductions it is the will that is surrendered to the enemy. Those who obey Satan rather than Elohim have got themselves a new Master: Satan. They have willingly surrendered to his Lordship and cannot claim to be under Grace. Grace empowers saints to live righteously, not to disobey Elohim and live in Sin!

**Romans 6:1-2, 11-16 (KJV)** *1 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? 2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?*

*11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. 15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. 16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?*

For that reason, willful sin is just like an act of Treason in the Kingdom, punishable by eternal separation for those who remain therein until the date of death.

**Hebrews 6:4-8 (KJV)** *4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, 6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame. 7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God: 8 But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned.*

**Hebrews 10:26-31 (KJV)** *26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, 27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. 28 He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: 29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? 30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.*

**Knowing the frailty of human nature, the same Elohim Who seeks holy living from saints at all times, has provided the remedy called REPENTANCE when they stumble in thought, word or deed!**

**1 John 1:5-10 (KJV)** *5 you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.v6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth:v7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.v8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.v9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.v10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.*

**1 John 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: 2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.*

In other words, while saints have been redeemed from the hand of the enemy, they have a duty to lay hold of the Grace of Elohim to continue in the Faith grounded and settled, obedient to His word!

**Colossians 1:21-23 (KJV)** *21 And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled 22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight: 23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;*

**1 John 2:3-6 (KJV)** *3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. 4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. 5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him. 6 He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.*

Teaching Eternal Security based on one part of the Holy Scriptures while ignoring the whole picture is a dangerous cherry picking of the Word. Those who sin intentionally with no remorse or conviction because they believed in eternal security or hyper-grace and those who die in their sins because they believed those two doctrines are ultimately responsible for missing the essence of Grace. Those who taught them error will have part of the blame when Judgement Day comes.

#### **#.6. Sectarianism and Denominationalism defined fruits of the Reformation.**

Most reformers were highly charismatic personalities with gift of eloquence. This drew people to them, not necessarily to the Father and His Word. People were invited to encounter personal interpretations of selective scriptures rather than the entire counsel of Elohim and Yeshua, Jesus Himself. The outcome was denominationalism as people congregated around specific revelations and personalities

**1 Corinthians 3:1-5, 22-23 (KJV)** *1 And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ. 2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able. 3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men? 4 For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal? 5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?*

*21 Therefore let no man glory in men. For all things are your's; 22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are your's; 23 And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.*

Denominations have since then become the greatest weapon of Satan to frustrate fulfillment of the prayers of Yeshua to His Father for unity.

**John 17:20-22 (KJV)** *20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; 21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:*

Denominations divide and decimate strength of the Church! Till today, the average saint thinks of the Church and Kingdom in terms of their denominations/sects. In reality, only a few saints truly embrace the truth that saints of all races, ages, gender, location, congregations are all part of the one single, indivisible Body of Yeshua and His Kingdom nation in the earth realm

**Ephesians 4:1-5 (KJV)** *1 I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, 2 With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; 3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4 There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.*

**1 Peter 2:9-10 (KJV)** *9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light; 10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.*

### **#.7. The virus of Rebellion and personal ownership of Religious entities was released like a genie out of the bottle.**

That first protest of Martin Luther against Rome led to creation of a new religious organization named after him: Lutheran Church/Lutheranism. This was an evil seed of epic proportions that has infected various branches of Protestantism! Till today, saints are divided according to how they relate to reformers who are long dead: Lutherans/Lutheranism; Calvinism/Calvinists; Arminianists, etc In the same way, saints use their spiritual experiences, rather than Yeshua and His Kingdom to define their identities: Baptists; Evangelicals; Pentecostals; Charismatics or even by being overly besotted by labels of their congregations to the point that they do not see the bigger, wider Body.

Today, majority of saints live without consciousness that it is not proper to bear the label of humans or religious organizations; that our core Identity is in Yeshua and in the Kingdom assignment committed to our trust. Today also, many saints are not able to walk in the reality of what Kingdom ministry is: the expression (or manifestation) of the gifts and callings Yeshua planted in us by Holy Spirit. In other words, Elohim is not asking us to build religious corporations we need to lead as evidence that we are in ministry. He has rather given us spheres of influence within which Holy Spirit wants to use our beings to show up and touch the lives of saints and sinners alike. In this Kingdom paradigm, all saints occupy their allotments by just impacting saint and sinners within their loops of influence as well as their communities as His Salt and Light! Luke 19:11-27; Matthew 5:13-16

When this paradigm of Kingdom ministry is understood and practiced, saints will stop making their plans of what to 'own' in terms of fellow saints, financial and material assets. We will rather allow our entire beings to be on the altar of sacrifice for He Who Owns us to use as it pleases Him

### **#.8. The Reformers did not discover and walk in manifestation of the Fivefold.**

The Alpha Church had been instructed through revelations granted Paul that to keep ensure maturity of the Church and empower the brethren to live as an organic, rather than organizational whole, Yeshua gave His awesome authority to Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors and Teachers

**Ephesians 4:11-16 (KJV)** *11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.*

It should be recalled that knowing that the presence of the Fivefold was a threat to the emergence of Mystery Babylon, the emergent Roman Catholic Church deleted the five offices and in its place embraced Nicolaitane tendencies which culminated in the pyramidal episcopacy with the Pope at apex, the Archbishops, Bishops and Parish Priest at the bottom. When the Protestant Movement burst onto the world scene, one would have expected it to realize how fundamental restoration of the Fivefold should be. Unfortunately, neither Martin Luther nor the other reformers of the 16th and 17th centuries dealt with this matter. The result was that believers of those days were tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine preached by powerful speakers.

**#.9: The Priesthood of all saints while nominally acknowledged, did not truly materialize because the structure to make it real was not put in place.**

The reality that Yeshua came to inaugurate the Royal Priesthood after the Order of Melchizedek so eloquently stated in the Book of Hebrews was largely ignored. Saints were not systematically taught the gifts of Holy Spirit Romans 12: 1-8; 1 Corinthians chapters 11 and 12; Ephesians 4: 11-16; 1 Peter 4:10-11 remained largely shrouded in mystery until much later with the Pentecostal and Charismatic Movements. Understanding and practice of spiritual gifts has never been mainstreamed until today!"

**#.10. Holy Spirit was not given space to lead and guide the Church nor was His Power sought as should have been.**

Apart from a handful who were immersed in Holy Spirit and the Word, most of the accomplishments of many Reformers depended largely on their intellectual prowess, towering personalities, eloquence, and ability to use words. This situation was only partially redressed in pockets of revival in different parts of the world in the 19th and 20th centuries but never on a mass basis. To do Church without Presence and Power of Holy Spirit is a state of spiritual darkness! No wonder that as the Teacher promised by Yeshua was on the sidelines, the natural mind with its limitations went to work.

**1 Corinthians 2:14 (KJV)** *14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*

**#11. The Protestant Movement Retained the Roman Catholic Theatre Paradigm of Ministry which cultures ABC Christianity.**

People flocked to meeting rooms to hear popular preachers of the day. With time, the individual preachers and their ideas became the focus rather than Yeshua and the Kingdom. The church was about Attendance, Buildings and of course the quantum of Cash generated to keep the system going.

## Review Questions

1. Please discuss any 4 of negative outcomes of the Protestant Reformation which ministered most to you.
2. Why is it unhealthy to bear labels of spiritual identity of living or dead humans and religious organizations?

## Chapter 60

### Negative Outcomes of the Protestant Reformation Part 3

Let us continue to be prostrate before Elohim, seeking His face so that He will reveal to us all things which have combined to disfigure the Church of Yeshua and make it lose focus, rather blending with the world and been in cahoots with it. Let us give Him right of way to reveal so that as we repent, He may use us to redeem the situation:

**Psalms 139:23-24 (KJV)** *23 Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: 24 And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.*

**Proverbs 28:13 (KJV)** *13 He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.*

**#.12.** The Faith which the Reformation re-discovered was defective in that it negated Love and Unity of the Faith, the twin signs that the World will use to know what is of and from Yeshua, Jesus, and the Kingdom!

The uniform testimony of History about the relationship of both the major Reformers and their followers is that it was less than desirable. It was one marked by competition, strife for pre-eminence and negativity! A Gospel devoid of love is a deficient one as the Epistle of Paul to the Galatians says because it breeds works of the flesh and emits a foul odor, rather than the sweet aroma of Yeshua!

**Galatians 5:6-9, 13-16 (KJV)** *6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love 7 Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth? 8 This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you. 9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.*

*13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another. 14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. 16 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.*

Our Lord and King, Yeshua Himself pronounced Love and Unity as two qualities which enable the world to recognize His Church as the Kingdom agency in the earth realm:

**John 13:34-35 (KJV)** *34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

**John 17:20-23 (KJV)** *20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; 21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.*

With each reformer clinging to the received revelations/illumination of scriptures and promoting same as the whole, the Body of Yeshua splintered and was unable to achieve the quality and quantity of synergy which would have caused many more to see the beauty of the Church and embrace the gospel.

In effect, the various half-gospels that people clung to made them members of denominations without consciousness of the unity of the Faith. What a tragic failure!

**#.13.** Nationalistic religious Ideologies, strict boundaries created a scenario of ‘us versus them’ which has plagued Christianity till today started.

What was shared in point 12 above and some others created a situation where different people groups and nationalities received and clung to the Protestant teachings and reformers they were affiliated to. The basis of racism and ethnic chauvinism now rampant in the Christian Community worldwide was laid by this tendency.

**#.14.** By not emphasizing the Kingdom but rather the creation of autonomous, nationalistic churches, the foundation was laid for what can today be termed as Churchianity.

This is competitive rather than the complementary preaching of the gospel. It created an environment for people to be comfortable with their church labels, relating only with those that are in their denominations and worse still, close their hearts and minds to other revelations they were not taught. Half knowledge can be dangerous and nowhere is this more deadly than in the things of the Kingdom! Ignorance became systemically entrenched!

**Hosea 4:6 (KJV)** *6 My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.*

**#.15.** The Great Commission was compromised with leaven of ‘Churchianity’

This sad state of affairs went on to play a major role in the deconstruction of the Great Commission. Various churches from Europe sent forth missionaries whose primary aim was to sell their Church brands and theologies rather than preach Jesus and the Kingdom. That virus created denominations fiercely opposed to each other in Africa, Asia, North and South America and rest of the world.

**Matthew 24:14 (KJV)** *14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*

In effect, what was preached across the world by missionaries from Europe was not the Gospel of the Kingdom but the gospel of Christian religion!

**#.16.** Ultimately, the Protestant Reformation went the way of Roman Catholicism by various compromises which corrupted good intent.

At the root of the error was a very simple truth: The Reformers missed an essential point: they were essentially engaged in a protest against aspects of Roman Catholicism they found obnoxious. In so doing, they tacitly acknowledged that the Roman Catholic Church was indeed the Church that Yeshua, Jesus birthed and left on earth but had been infested with doctrines and practices which corrupted it for which they had come to reform and purge.

Unfortunately, the reality is that Roman Catholicism was not the Church that Yeshua birthed on the Day of Pentecost whose Mandate and Kingdom pattern of life, ministry and priesthood are well documented in the 27 Books of the New Covenant! The Alpha Church was pure of the leaven of Babylon and has always had a remnant of its offspring ever since. Roman Catholicism was a creation of Church leaders

(who could not bear the sacrifices required to maintain their faith in a hostile environment) and embraced their tormentors (Roman Empire) to create a worldly Church of the State. This is the root and basis of Christendom as a creation of humans to blend the backslidden wing of the Alpha Church with the Empire.

What needed to be done was a whole sale rejection of the mixture which Rome represented.

**Matthew 3:8-10 (KJV)** *8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: 9 And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. 10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.*

**#.17.** The Fruit is Evidence! The Religious Right of the Western World epitomize the failings of the Reformation.

The leaven that the union of Church and state represented (Rome) went on to infect the emergent Protestant Movement which also embraced State patronage. As noted before, this was the case from the days of Martin Luther. In Geneva, John Calvin enforced with an iron fist, a merger of church and state. Even till date, State patronage is the heart desire of many Christian Religious leaders! It was written that a little leaven leavens the lump!

**1 Corinthians 5:6 (KJV)** *6 Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?*

**1 Corinthians 5:7 (KJV)** *7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us*

Blind to what it wants and relying on the mixture of Spirituality, Politics, Ideology, Economics and Social Sciences, the Religious right, rely on the arm of the flesh to fight the Left/Liberals. In the process so much hate, hypocrisy, and outright lies are deployed – all in the Name of God – to advance Conservative causes. In the same way, those in the Religious Left have veered into secular humanism to the degree that preaching the true, pure gospel has taken a back seat to issues of social justice, climate change and embrace of lifestyles which are inherently opposed to Holiness. Therefore, the Religious Left/Liberals also hunts for union with Governments so that it can ride on their back to affect its dream of utopia on earth.

### Review Questions

1. Please summarize 3 Negative outcomes of the reformation you consider significant.

## Chapter 61

### Negative Outcomes of the Reformation – Part 4 Blood Guiltiness

#### Part B of Negative Outcomes of the Reformation: Social/Political Effects

Blood Guiltiness: Ungodly wars/reliance on arm of flesh to enforce Holiness

Protestants tend to paint the past in bright colors to the degree that one is tempted to conclude that everything about it was just plain righteous indignation against Mystery Babylon! For this reason, most discussions of the Reformation tend to stop at the positive spiritual impact. These two approaches are unhelpful. We need to humble ourselves and posture before the Lord to receive an expanded understanding of what happened during that period of the strategic shift in history. The strange thing about History is that it brings everything to light concerning the past. The Gold Standard of the Kingdom is the Word and authority of the King. In several teachings, Yeshua made it clear that those who are of Him are required to be peaceful, pursue peace and absolutely forbidden from being vengeful or violent. When persecuted, their response is to be that of joy to be accounted worthy of identification with Him:

**Matthew 5:5, 9-12 (KJV)** *5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.*

*9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. 10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 11 Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.*

**Matthew 5:20-26 (KJV)** *20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. 21 Ye have heard that it was said of them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: 22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. 23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.*

*38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: 39 But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. 40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. 41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain...*

*43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbor, and hate thine enemy. 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye*

*more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

He made it clear to Pilate that His Kingdom was not of this world

In this regard, the Lord used Paul the apostle to warn saints against trying to achieve spiritual objectives with fleshly means:

**John 18:36 (KJV)** *36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.*

**Ephesians 6:10-12 (KJV)** *10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. 11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.*

**Hebrews 12:24 (KJV)** *24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.*

From our study today, we will see that Blood guiltiness (complicity in the shedding of Blood) was very much a part of the Protestant heritage! We need to recognize, acknowledge and humble ourselves before the Lord to engage in representational repentance of this evil which ran counter to some of the very basic principles of the Kingdom as enunciated by Yeshua, Jesus. As we know from the Holy Scriptures, Blood is life. When life is terminated abruptly through war or wickedness, the spilled blood speaks, demanding justice or vengeance. Those who acknowledge that victims did not need to die the way they did bring in the ministry of the Blood of Yeshua, Jesus which speaks Mercy and Peace.

Let this caveat be expressed: It was not necessarily intentional that Protestants sought to enforce holiness in society or the work place through the arm of the flesh. There may have been good intentions when certain doctrines were first preached. However, the ultimate test of all things in the Kingdom is the fruit of actions they generate.

Let us read from encyclopedia.com a secular account of the Peasants War in Germany during the Reformation period and later consider how the Reformers were complicit in a situation which led to the premature brutal termination of lives of over 100, 000 people.

“Peasants War

A rebellion that lasted from 1524 to 1525 in German-speaking domains of the Holy Roman Empire. The revolt originated in opposition to the heavy burdens of taxes and duties on the German serfs, who had no legal rights and no opportunity to improve their lot. These conditions had sparked conflict in the fifteenth century, but these uprisings remained local and contained. A more widespread rebellion was finally sparked in the 1520s by the movement for reform in the Catholic Church, and the social and political upheavals that the Protestant Reformation caused. With the authority of church prelates challenged by Martin Luther and others, the peasants saw their cause supported by the Protestant emphasis on individual faith. Empowered in their religious views, and pressed by crop failures that threatened starvation, they saw an opportunity to overthrow the feudal system, in which they were bound to the estates of the nobles and forced to give up the produce of the fields in which they worked.

The revolt began in the summer of 1524 in the county of Stühlingen, in the region of Upper Swabia near the border of Germany and Switzerland. It spread quickly in southern and western Germany, and as far as Switzerland and Austria. In the spring of 1525, there were five large bands of peasants roaming the countryside, burning homes of nobles and princes, and bringing townspeople over to their side. The peasants sought relief from heavy taxes, an end to serfdom, fair trials, and an end to the taxes they owed on the death of a member of their families. They set down these demands in a document known as the Twelve Articles. The rebels seized the town of Heilbronn, where they formed a Parliament, as well as Würzburg, the seat of a Catholic bishop.

In Thuringia, the rebels were led by Thomas Muntzer, a fiery Protestant leader.

Poor townspeople and urban artisans joined the rebellion, which also won the support of Huldrych Zwingli, a prominent Protestant leader, but was opposed by Martin Luther. In the meantime, an army of the Swabian League gathered and marched north into Franconia, in central Germany, defeating the peasants in battle at Frankenhausen and Königshofen. About one hundred thousand combatants and civilians were killed before the fighting died down in late 1525, while the armies of the opposition carried out deadly reprisals for the next two years. Small local rebellions continued into the next year in Austria, but the defeat of the peasants in Germany brought a complete repudiation of their demands for a more just economic system. The discontent of the peasants would continue through the sixteenth and early seventeenth century, adding to the bitter conflicts between Protestant and Catholic territories that would finally erupt into the Thirty Years' War in the early 1600s."

It is interesting that the Peasants tried to use the works of Martin Luther as theological basis of their revolt. His reaction to the extent of their rebellion was however heavy handed. Here is how Wikipedia.com describes the reaction of the leader of the Protestant Reformation:

"Luther remained largely ignorant of the extent to which the unrest permeated the peasantry until he embarked on a tour of Thuringia with Philipp Melanchthon. It was at this time that he was able to observe firsthand the severity of the situation, peasants doing "the devil's work". He attempted to prevent further violence by preaching against it but recognized that this had little if any impact.

In May 1525, he wrote *Against the Rioting Peasants*, a title which would be harshened by printers in other cities without Luther's approval. In this publication, he upbraided the peasants on three charges: that they had violated oaths of loyalty, which makes them subject to secular punishment; they had committed crimes that went against their faith; and that their crimes were committed using Christ's name which was blasphemy:

The peasants have taken upon themselves the burden of three terrible sins against God and man; by this, they have merited death in body and soul... they have sworn to be true and faithful, submissive and obedient, to their rulers... now deliberately and violently breaking this oath... they are starting a rebellion, and are violently robbing and plundering monasteries and castles which are not theirs... they have doubly deserved death in body and soul as highwaymen and murderers... they cloak this terrible and horrible sin with the gospel... thus they become the worst blasphemers of God and slanderers of his holy name"

Luther goes so far as to justify the actions of the Princes against the peasants, even when it involves acts of violence. He feels that they can be punished by the lords on the basis that they have “become faithless, perjured, disobedient, rebellious, murderers, robbers, and blasphemers, whom even a heathen ruler has the right and authority to punish”. He even venerates those who fight against the peasants, stating that “anyone who is killed fighting on the side of the rulers may be a true martyr in the eyes of God”.

He closes with a sort of disclaimer, “if anyone thinks this too harsh, let him remember that rebellion is intolerable, and that the destruction of the world is to be expected every hour”. One of the reasons why Luther urged that the secular authorities crush the peasant rebellion was because of St. Paul's teaching of the doctrine of Divine Right of Kings in his epistle to the Romans 13:1–7, which says that all the authorities are appointed by God, and should not, therefore, be resisted.

Encyclopedia.com provides another very insightful account of another major military conflict in which Protestant leaders and the movement was very implicated: The Thirty Years War “THIRTY YEARS' WAR (1618–1648).

THIRTY YEARS' WAR (1618–1648). The Thirty Years' War was one of the greatest and longest armed contests of the early modern period. Some historians have argued that it was a series of separate wars that happened to overlap in time and space rather than one coherent sequence of military campaigns in which a clearly defined set of issues was at stake throughout. If one looks at the Thirty Years' War in a European context, there is some truth in this argument. However, in central Europe, in particular, in the Holy Roman Empire, the military and political events of the thirty years between the defenestration of Prague in May 1618 and the signing of the Westphalian peace treaties in October 1648 formed one continuous conflict and were in fact already perceived as such by most contemporaries.

#### THE CAUSES OF THE WAR

For the outbreak of the war the deepening crisis of the Holy Roman Empire was of crucial importance. The crisis had a constitutional and political as well as a religious dimension. The Emperor's prerogatives had never been clearly defined; a ruler who knew how to exploit his considerable informal powers of patronage could enjoy a great deal of authority, but a weak monarch could easily be reduced to a mere figurehead. This was very much Rudolf II's (ruled 1576–1612) fate during the last decade of his reign. The aging emperor, who was increasingly mentally unstable, was distrusted by both Catholics and Protestants. Moreover, he had managed to antagonize his own family.

The power vacuum created by the collapse of his authority enabled ambitious princes such as Maximilian I, the duke of Bavaria, or Frederick V, the elector palatine, to pursue their own agenda. Their attempts to exploit the simmering religious conflict in Germany, which found its expression in the foundation of the Protestant Union, led by the Palatinate, in 1608 and the Catholic League (Liga), led by Bavaria, in 1609, were bound to undermine peace and stability. Germany had in the past been largely spared the horrors of religious warfare, thanks to the Religious Peace of Augsburg (1555).

However, many problems had been left unresolved in 1555, such as the status of the ecclesiastical principalities that were ruled by Protestant prince-bishops, and of ecclesiastical property confiscated and secularized after 1555. The status of the Calvinists, who almost all Catholics and many Lutherans

wanted to exclude from the benefits of the peace settlement as heretics, was also controversial. Initially the Imperial Chamber Court (Reichskammergericht) —one of the two highest law courts in Germany— had managed to settle disputes between the religious antagonists, but from the 1580s onward it became increasingly paralyzed, and the Imperial Diet (Reichstag) equally failed to provide a forum for compromise. The confessionalization of politics, culture, and society in the later sixteenth century had in fact created a climate of all-pervasive distrust that made such a compromise almost impossible. The enthusiastic adherents of both Counter-Reformation Catholicism and the eschatological worldview that most Calvinists and some Lutherans subscribed to saw the outbreak of armed conflict in the long run as both inevitable and even to some extent desirable.

However, whereas such mental attitudes were an important ingredient in the generally belligerent atmosphere that formed a crucial precondition for the outbreak of hostilities, their more immediate cause was the confrontation between the Emperor and the Estates of Bohemia and its neighboring principalities, in particular, Moravia and Upper Austria. Whereas Emperor Matthias (ruled 1612–1619) and his advisers wanted to recover the ground that had been lost by the Catholic Church and the ruling dynasty alike in the preceding years of domestic crisis, the Protestant opposition emphasized the elective character of the monarchy in Bohemia and its subjection to the control of the Estates. They vigorously defended the privileges of the Protestant Church that had been confirmed and extended during the last years of Rudolf II's reign.

Reacting to the relentless Counter-Reformation offensive, which had, by a combination of missionary activity, generous imperial patronage for converts, and brute force already been successful in Styria, Carinthia, and elsewhere, they decided to kill the emperor's governors in Prague in the spring of 1618 by throwing them out of the windows of the imperial palace during a meeting of the Estates.

The governors miraculously survived this defenestration, but the armed conflict had now become unavoidable. Soon both sides tried to find allies both in Germany and in Europe. In Spain, the fall of the Duke of Lerma as royal favorite in 1618 marked the victory of those factions at court that favored a more assertive and warlike policy in central Europe, whereas at the same time in the Netherlands the adherents of rigid Calvinism and of an aggressively anti-Spanish policy gained the upper hand in 1618–1619 during and after the Synod of Dort (Dordrecht). Thus, a renewal of the twelve-year truce between Spain and the Netherlands that had been signed in 1609 became unlikely at the very moment when the Bohemian Estates rose against the Habsburgs. A war in Bohemia and Germany was therefore bound to become part of a wider European conflict sooner or later.

In another insightful article on [encyclopedia.com](http://encyclopedia.com), we see another case where Protestant leaders set the Words of Yeshua aside to enforce their concepts of the Kingdom on earth: A Theocracy established by force of arms:

“Münster Prophets.

Wherever the Anabaptists taught the new doctrines, harsh, repressive measures arose to discourage them. One exception was the northern German town of Münster, but the establishment of an Anabaptist state there in 1534 was to have far-reaching implications for the subsequent history of the movement. The so-called Revolution of the Prophets that occurred in Münster helped condemn Anabaptism to continue widespread unpopularity. In 1533, the Reformation had just been officially

established in the town, when one of the city's preachers, Bernard Rothmann, convinced the council to take in persecuted Anabaptists from the neighboring Netherlands. During 1533, the numbers of Anabaptists at Münster swelled and this encouraged the spread of the religion among the local population. By February 1534, the Anabaptist party seized control of local government and advised those who were not in agreement with their religious views to leave. Over the next few months, a dictatorship of the Anabaptists emerged, eventually led by one Dutch immigrant, John of Leyden, who tried to establish a godly community through force. The new Münster government was a theocracy, run by the town's religious leaders that carefully controlled every dimension of the town's life. They abolished both private property and the circulation of money within the city because neither of those things had played a role in the ancient church. Leyden also demanded compulsory polygamy from his subjects and he justified the practice because of its use among the Old Testament patriarchs.

The intensive regulation that Leyden introduced in Münster was soon unpopular among many in the town, and a reign of terror, complete with horrifying public executions, became necessary to keep the populace in line. While all this was transpiring within the town's walls, a confederation of princes from the surrounding region had joined with the local Catholic bishop of Münster to lay siege to the town. As this siege lengthened, conditions within the city's walls worsened. The Münster Anabaptists desperately pegged their hopes on the arrival of reinforcements from the Netherlands, but although thousands of Dutch Anabaptists marched on Münster, the military forces in the vicinity crushed them. In June 1535, months after the siege of the town had begun, Münster was retaken and many of its Anabaptists slaughtered. John of Leyden and his associates were tried, displayed in cages for several months, and finally tortured and publicly executed in January 1536. Harsh reprisals against the movement followed the suppression of the Revolution of the Münster Prophets, and persecution of Anabaptists remained the rule almost everywhere in sixteenth-century Europe.

Pockets of Anabaptists survived, particularly in the Netherlands, Switzerland, and Moravia, but these groups settled down into a life of quiet pacifism. Nowhere were the dramatic events of Münster to be repeated. It was not until the eighteenth century, and the expansion of the British colonies in North America, that Anabaptism was truly able to prosper. In Pennsylvania, the radical wing of the Reformation found a home that was more congenial than Europe. And in the nineteenth century many of the descendants of the sixteenth-century radical reformers, including Anabaptist offshoots like the Mennonites and the Amish, spread into the American Midwest and the Canadian plains.

Let us continue to read from [encyclopedia.com](http://encyclopedia.com)

Visible Saints.

Some found Calvin's emphasis on God's majesty and predestination distasteful because it denied all free will and any human participation in the process of salvation. At the same time, Calvin's devoted followers found reassurance in these same teachings. Calvin always assured his followers that they could be relatively certain of their election if they were leading good Christian lives, and Calvinists stressed that good works were the visible signs God produced in His saints. Works thus testified to election. But this doctrine of election also bolstered many Calvinists as they defied the authority of the state when its laws and actions contradicted the teachings of the scriptures. Over time, the notion of election spilled over into other areas of Calvinist life. In seventeenth-century Calvinist communities in England, Scotland,

the Netherlands, and North America, many followers of the religion saw worldly success, especially in the world of commerce, as a sign of God's favor. In this way, the Calvinist notion of election contributed to that complex set of ideas and behaviors that have often been referred to as "the Protestant Work Ethic."

Scriptures.

Calvin's attitude toward the scriptures also explains some of the differences that developed between Calvinism and Lutheranism. Luther had taught that the primary purpose of the Bible was to reveal God's gift of salvation by faith, and thus those parts of scripture that treated faith were more important than those that did not. By contrast, Calvin's attitude toward the Bible was more complex and closer to Zwingli's. He believed that the scriptures were a record of two covenants or promises God had established with humankind throughout history: law and grace. The church had a duty to ensure the establishment of biblical laws in society; at Geneva, the town's pastors closely supervised the morality of citizens.

Each week a Consistory met to hear cases of immorality among the town's inhabitants. The consistory included all nine of Geneva's pastors and twelve elders chosen from the town council and had the power to excommunicate, expel, and even sentence citizens to death for violating the town's strict moral code. As Calvinism spread beyond Geneva, the consistory was sometimes an appealing feature to local civic leaders and princes as a way to control the morality of their subjects. The consistory could be used as a way to establish greater discipline among citizens. Other monarchs, though, feared the sharing of church and state powers within the consistory as a challenge to their power.

Let us also consider another article in encyclopedia.com which explains why Protestants were often inclined to violent tendencies:

Violence.

Violence was often the result of the early confrontations between Calvinism and Catholicism. Calvinism taught that many of the traditional rituals of the Catholic Church were not just the products of wrong thinking, but were sources of evil that needed to be eliminated. Calvinist preachers often stressed the similarities between the idolatries God had vigorously punished in the Old Testament and those practiced by sixteenth-century Catholics. Many Calvinists believed that tolerating these modern idolatries would result in divine punishment, and so they staged episodes of iconoclastic destruction upon religious images, relics, and other Catholic objects. Calvinists often timed these demonstrations to occur on particularly important Catholic holidays. They sometimes subjected the Catholic host to mock tortures before destroying it. In this way, they hoped to demonstrate to their opponents that Catholicism's ritual objects were merely physical things that could not aid in a person's salvation.

Catholics responded with violent counterattacks, and deadly riots often erupted. In the second half of the sixteenth-century religious violence between Catholics and Calvinists, particularly in France and the Netherlands, was a frequent threat to public order and claimed many lives. Between 1562 and 1598 civil war raged in France over the question of what would be the state religion. During this time, there were many battles between rival noble armies and the forces of the crown. But sporadic outbursts of street

fighting and rioting, similar to modern Northern Ireland or Lebanon, occurred throughout the period, too.

In the series of massacres that occurred around St. Bartholomew's Day in the late summer of 1572 as many as 5,000, mostly Calvinist French, may have been slaughtered. In 1598, the royal pronouncements of the Edict of Nantes helped to end this violence. The Edict granted Calvinists a limited degree of religious toleration in France, allowing them to fortify themselves for protection within certain French cities. Calvinists were forbidden to preach their religion outside these cities. The solution of the Edict of Nantes survived until 1685 when Louis XIV revoked it and forced Calvinists to convert to Catholicism or to leave France.

#### Sources

W. J. Bouwsma, *John Calvin: A Sixteenth-Century Portrait* (London, England: Oxford University Press, 1988).

E. Cameron, *The European Reformation* (London, England: Oxford University Press, 1991).

A. G. Dickens, *The English Reformation* (University Park, Pa.: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1989).

G. R. Elton, ed., *The New Cambridge Modern History: The Reformation, 1520–1559* (Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press, 1990).

W. P. Stephens, *The Theology of Huldrych Zwingli* (London, England: Oxford University Press, 1986).

Let us stand in the gap, weeping between the porch and altar, in representational repentance of this terrible blot on history of the Reformation movement! May the Blood of the eternal covenant put to silence the speakings of blood of multitudes who perished in that period of time!

#### Review Questions

1. Please summarize how Protestantism fostered Blood Guiltiness

## Chapter 62

### Negative Outcomes of the Reformation – Part 5 The terrible 3!

We enjoin all saints to tarry as we receive further insight into some of the dark trails left by fruits of the Protestant Reformation in the sands of time. To those who want to know the significance of this section on Negative Outcomes of the Protestant Reformation, the answer is simple: No matter how bitter, ultimately, Truth heals!

**John 8:32 (KJV)** *32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

Let us, therefore, examine three more negative fruits that afflicted the earth realm at different times – in which Protestants were complicit: The Slave Trade; Colonialism and Apartheid.

#### #.19. The Slave Trade

Just like the Catholic Church, different strands of the Protestant Movement participated in and profited from the terrible blight on humanity that was the Trans-Atlantic Slave Trade. During the period from the 15th to the 19th centuries it is estimated that between 25 - 40 million youths were uprooted from their families across several African communities, sold into slavery, packed like sardines into the hold of ships and transported in inhumane conditions to a life of hard labor in the West Indies, North and South America. Only about 12million of the slaves survived the middle passage. In the Americas, they were segregated and used as chattel to produce cash crops for their masters.

From those who owned Slave trading companies to those who owned or operated Slave ships and those who bought, owned and profited from this inhuman business were many who identified themselves as Christians, Christian leaders and even Christian denominations – Roman Catholic as well as Protestant. To worsen matters, some Protestant leaders, including Bishops in the House of Lords of the British Parliament were reported to have voted down the attempts of a notable Protestant Minister, William Wilberforce to abolish Slave Trade by law. Let us consider this highly insightful piece by Dr. Neil Frankel in his website [slaverysite.com](http://slaverysite.com):

“Role of Organized Religion

Predominant Religions in European Countries Involved in the Atlantic Slave Trade

**Portugal:** Primarily Roman Catholic. In 1497, expelled the Jews and the few remaining Moors, or forced them to convert.

**Spain:** Primarily Roman Catholic. In 1492, expelled the Jews and the few remaining Moors, or forced them to convert. For five centuries, from the 8th to the 13th century, Spain was ruled by Muslims. Jews and Christians were free to practice their faith during this period.

**Britain:** Britain was a Catholic country until Henry the VIII split with the Roman Catholic church after the church refused to agree with his divorce from his first wife. When Elizabeth I became Queen in 1558, Britain became a Protestant country by law with the Sovereign declared head of the Church of England.

**Netherlands:** Anti-Catholic riots spread across the country in 1566, leading to a revolt that culminated in the formation of the Union of Utrecht. In 1581 the Union of Utrecht proclaimed independence from Catholic Spain. Today, northern Holland is predominantly Protestant, and southern Holland is predominantly Catholic.

**France:** Primarily Roman Catholic. In the 16th century the Huguenots, strongly influenced by John Calvin, were growing in number and viewed as seditious by the government. The result was eight civil wars and several massacres of the Huguenots. During the 17th century, persecution led many of the Huguenots to leave France. Many went to the Netherlands, and others settled in England, Ireland, America, Germany, Switzerland, and South Africa.

To What Extent Have Religious Leaders Apologized For 400 Years of Participation In The Atlantic Slave Trade and Slavery?

The Church of England: In February 2006, the Church of England apologized for its involvement in the slave trade and benefits derived from it. (48) Said the Guardian: "The Church of England last night said sorry for the role it played in the 18th century in benefiting from slave labor in the Caribbean. ...

Speakers in the synod debate acknowledged that the church had played its part in justifying slavery during the long campaign by William Wilberforce and others ..."

The Rt Rev Tom Butler, Bishop of Southwark, told the synod: "We know that bishops in the House of Lords with biblical authority voted against the abolition of the slave trade. We know that the church owned sugar plantations on the Codrington estates [where they also owned slaves. Codrington estates are in Barbados]." The Guardian also noted that "A recent book, *Bury the Chains* (51), by the American author Adam Hochschild, clearly influenced the debate. It says the church's missionary organization, the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, branded its slaves on the chest with the word SOCIETY to show who they belonged to."

## **America**

On this subject matter, an article titled *Religion in colonial America: Trends, Regulations, and Belief* published on the website [facinghistory.org](http://facinghistory.org) have this interesting observation:

"Slavery—which was also firmly established and institutionalized between the 1680s and the 1780s—was also shaped by religion. The use of violence against slaves, their social inequality, together with the settlers' contempt for all religions other than Christianity "resulted in the destructiveness of extraordinary breadth, the loss of traditional religious practices among the half-million slaves brought to the mainland colonies between the 1680s and the American Revolution."

Even in churches which reached out to convert slaves to their congregations —the Baptists are a good example—slaves were most often a silent minority. If they received any Christian religious instructions, it was, more often than not, from their owners rather than in Sunday school."

## #.20. Colonialism

Colonialism is the business of extending a nation to territories owned by other people who are subjugated and ruled directly or indirectly. Where Kingdom culture exists, no people group who are identified with the New Covenant would encourage, endorse or participate in the brutal subjugation of a people to displace them internally, take over their resources and use same for the benefit of the colonial power.

Across Africa, Asia, South and North America as well as Canada, Australia and New Zealand and Island nations in the Oceans, Europeans of both Roman Catholic and Protestant persuasions sailed across the waters to discover, take over, rule new lands and appropriate local resources for benefit of their mother lands. This was as brutal a business as any other. In most cases, two main carrots that were deployed to entrap native Chiefs and their peoples were: Trade and Religion. With the Bible, natives were lulled to trust and when their guards were down, the Sword, representing the force of arms was unsheathed. It is noteworthy that both Roman Catholic as well as Protestant nations were active in various forms of colonial rule. In other words, being 'Protestant' did not extend to civic life. It was about being a 'good Christian' who goes to Church on Sundays and is ready to do what those regarded as part of Mystery Babylon did from Monday - Saturday!

For an analytical presentation of the subject matter, an article in Wikipedia titled 'Christianity and Colonialism' makes an excellent read:

"Christianity and colonialism are often closely associated because Catholicism and Protestantism were the religions of the European colonial powers and acted in many ways as the "religious arm" of those powers. According to Edward Andrews, Christian missionaries were initially portrayed as "visible saints, exemplars of ideal piety in a sea of persistent savagery". However, by the time the colonial era drew to a close in the last half of the twentieth century, missionaries became viewed as "ideological shock troops for colonial invasion whose zealotry blinded them", colonialism's "agent, scribe, and moral alibi."

Christianity is targeted by critics of colonialism because the tenets of the religion were used to justify the actions of the colonists. For example, Toyin Falola asserts that there were some missionaries who believed that "the agenda of colonialism in Africa was similar to that of Christianity". Falola cites Jan H. Boer of the Sudan United Mission as saying, "Colonialism is a form of imperialism based on a divine mandate and designed to bring liberation - spiritual, cultural, economic and political - by sharing the blessings of the Christ-inspired civilization of the West with a people suffering from satanic oppression, ignorance and disease, affected by a combination of political, economic and religious forces that cooperate under a regime seeking the benefit of both ruler and ruled."

Edward Andrews writes:

Historians have traditionally looked at Christian missionaries in one of two ways. The first church historians to catalog missionary history provided hagiographic descriptions of their trials, successes, and sometimes even martyrdom. Missionaries were thus visible saints, exemplars of

ideal piety in a sea of persistent savagery. However, by the middle of the twentieth century, an era marked by civil rights movements, anticolonialism, and growing secularization, missionaries were viewed quite differently. Instead of godly martyrs, historians now described missionaries as arrogant and rapacious imperialists. Christianity became not a saving grace but a monolithic and aggressive force that missionaries imposed upon defiant natives. Indeed, missionaries were now understood as important agents in the ever-expanding nation-state, or "ideological shock troops for colonial invasion whose zealotry blinded them."

According to Jake Meador, "some Christians have tried to make sense of postcolonial Christianity by renouncing practically everything about the Christianity of the colonizers. They reason that if the colonialists' understanding of Christianity could be used to justify rape, murder, theft, and empire then their understanding of Christianity is completely wrong. "

#### Application of this principle in America

The early years of what became the United States of America is a case study of how Religion was effectively used to justify and sustain colonial endeavor. The Pilgrim Fathers were Protestants who sought space in the New World free from the stifling effects of State oversight of Religion in England. To them, the space in America would guarantee them freedom to worship God as they desired. Unfortunately, this ideal was to be pursued at the expense of the Native people groups who lived on the land. The systematic displacement and appropriation of their land and other resources offer a classic example of how 'the Bible in one hand and the Sword in the other' became a tool of conquest.

Interestingly, once oppression is accepted as a norm, it has a way of turning inwards when there are no more external enemies to fight. This article on "Religion in colonial America: Trends, Regulations and Belief" published on the website [facinghistory.org](http://facinghistory.org) shares some insight into how Religion generally and Protestantism shaped the emergent nation:

"To understand how America's current balance among national law, local community practice, and individual freedom of belief evolved, it's helpful to understand some of the common experiences and patterns around religion in colonial culture in the period between 1600 and 1776.

In the early years of what later became the United States, Christian religious groups played an influential role in each of the British colonies, and most attempted to enforce strict religious observance through both colony governments and local town rules. Most attempted to enforce strict religious observance. Laws mandated that everyone attend a house of worship and pay taxes that funded the salaries of ministers. Eight of the thirteen British colonies had official, or "established," churches, and in those colonies, dissenters who sought to practice or proselytize a different version of Christianity or a non-Christian faith were sometimes persecuted.

Although most colonists considered themselves Christians, this did not mean that they lived in a culture of religious unity. Instead, differing Christian groups often believed that their own practices and faiths provided unique values that needed protection against those who disagreed, driving a need for rule and regulation. In Europe, Catholic and Protestant nations often persecuted or forbade each other's

religions, and British colonists frequently maintained restrictions against Catholics. In Great Britain, the Protestant Anglican church had split into bitter divisions among traditional Anglicans and the reforming Puritans, contributing to an English civil war in the 1600s. In the British colonies, differences among Puritan and Anglican remained.

Between 1680 and 1760 Anglicanism and Congregationalism, an offshoot of the English Puritan movement established themselves as the main organized denominations in the majority of the colonies. As the seventeenth and eighteenth century passed on, however, the Protestant wing of Christianity constantly gave birth to new movements, such as the Baptists, Methodists, Quakers, Unitarians and many more, sometimes referred to as “Dissenters.” In communities where one existing faith was dominant, new congregations were often seen as unfaithful troublemakers who were upsetting the social order.

Despite the effort to govern society on Christian (and more specifically Protestant) principles, the first decades of colonial era in most colonies were marked by irregular religious practices, minimal communication between remote settlers, and a population of “Murderers, Theeves, Adulterers, [and] idle persons.” An ordinary Anglican American parish stretched between 60 and 100 miles and was often very sparsely populated. In some areas, women accounted for no more than a quarter of the population and given the relatively small number of conventional households and the chronic shortage of clergymen, religious life was haphazard and irregular for most. Even in Boston, which was more highly populated and dominated by the Congregational Church, one inhabitant complained in 1632 that the “fellows which keep hogges all week preach on the Sabbath.”

Christianity was further complicated by the widespread practice of astrology, alchemy and forms of witchcraft. The fear of such practices can be gauged by the famous trials held in Salem, Massachusetts, in 1692 and 1693. Surprisingly, alchemy and other magical practices were not altogether divorced from Christianity in the minds of many “natural philosophers” (the precursors of scientists), who sometimes thought of them as experiments that could unlock the secrets of Scripture. As we might expect, established clergy discouraged these explorations.

In turn, as the colonies became more settled, the influence of the clergy and their churches grew. At the heart of most communities was the church; at the heart of the calendar was the Sabbath—a period of intense religious and “secular” activity that lasted all day long. After years of struggles to impose discipline and uniformity on Sundays, the selectmen of Boston at last could “parade the street and oblige everyone to go to Church . . . on pain of being put in Stokes or otherwise confined,” one observer wrote in 1768. By then, few communities openly tolerated travel, drinking, gambling, or blood sports on the Sabbath.”

## #21. Apartheid.

The Protestant movement was heavily implicated in the emergence and sustenance of Apartheid in South Africa through the Dutch Reformed Church which grew out of Calvinism. Evidently, they translated the doctrine of election to mean that Europeans had the right to enforce slavery on Blacks

because God gave them the right to do so; that Europeans were destined to perpetually dominate and rule over the Blacks who they regarded as less than human and therefore unfit to live in the same locations or enjoy the same quality of municipal services.

The Religious dimensions of this segregationist policy is further highlighted in another Wikipedia article

“The Apartheid system, as well as resistance to it, was both a political and theological matter. In the 20th century, several Christian churches supported Apartheid and racial divisions. Some opposed it. One of the largest Christian denomination, the Dutch Reformed Church (NGK), used Christian theology to argue a theological support for the Apartheid. The Dutch Reformed Church, with 3 million Christian members, remained the "official religion" of the Apartheid-supporting National Party.

The NGK not only supported Apartheid, in 1881 it established a separate colored church. In 1910, segregation was the South African Dutch Reformed Church's policy, and black Africans who were part of its denomination had to worship in Churches meant for black Africans. In 1948, Daniel François Malan – the former pastor of the Dutch Reformed Church became the Prime Minister. He cemented Apartheid ideas through additional laws and active enforcement. Most church leaders supported and were committed to Apartheid, but a few did not. Reverend Beyers Naude, for example, joined the blacks-only parish after leaving his whites-only church in the late 1970s.

Let us conclude this topic with this South African Proverb: “Christianity: South African Black Theology When the white man came to our country, he had the Bible and we (Blacks) had the land. The white man said to us, "Let us pray". After the prayer, the white man had the land, and we had the Bible - A South African proverb, Transl: Gerald West”

In the Name of God, great evil was committed across the world. Colonialism, Slave Trade and Oppression/Mistreatment of the weak, women and sinners were all justified with the Bible.

### Review Questions

1. Please summarize each of the 3 Negative outcomes that arose out of the Protestant world in this chapter.

## Chapter 63

### The Dispensation of Ham: Closes out the Human Age

#### Some Inconvenient Truths about the Dispensation of Ham

Despite all that has been said, the reality is that all the negative effects of the Reformation did not catch Elohim by surprise. He knew that it would be so, just as He foreknew that the sons of Shem represented by the Hebrews/Jews of Israel would fall short of His expectations with the way they turned His Kingdom Covenant with them into the religion of Judaism. As Romans 11 clearly stated, their fall was to make room for the Gentiles to come onto the Commonwealth after which they would be restored.

When Paul made the prophetic remark in Acts 28:28 he was proclaiming the change of holding the Baton of Kingdom business in the earth realm from the house of Shem to the House of Japheth. The House of Japheth, represented by the Roman Empire was then the prevailing social, economic and political power in the world. As this study has clearly shown, the House of Japheth did not fare better: it threw the baton to the ground by turning Gospel of Yeshua, Jesus and the Kingdom into Christian Religion represented by Roman Catholicism and the divisive variations of Protestantism. Apparently, the Gentile led Church (both Roman Catholicism and Protestantism) had never given serious thought to what was at work in their failures: neglect of the warnings of Elohim in Romans 11.

#### The Baton in the hands of sons of Ham

Through the Slave Trade, Colonization and Apartheid, the descendants of Ham in Africa suffered untold deprivation of their liberties, forceful appropriation of their human and natural resources for building the economic and social prosperity of the two branches of the human family (Shem and Japheth). Africa, the Land of Ham suffered two dimensions of the Slave Trade:

- i. The Trans Saharan Slave Trade orchestrated and run by Arabs, who were of the seed of Shem.
- ii. The Trans-Atlantic Slave Trade orchestrated by Europeans, of the Seed of Japheth.

For many Europeans who were influenced by Calvinism, Slavery of Africans was just a fulfillment of the pronouncements of Noah, (father of the human race after the flood) on his son Ham. This scripture has been used as a pretext to enforce subjugation of Africa and its offspring in North and South Americas and Europe:

**Genesis 9:20-27 (KJV)** *20 And Noah began to be an husbandman, and he planted a vineyard: 21 And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. 22 And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. 23 And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's nakedness. 24 And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him. 25 And he said, Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren. 26 And he said, Blessed be the Lord God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. 27 God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant.*

The fact that humanity has been short sighted about the case of Noah and his three sons shows how and why cherry picking of scriptures can be dangerous. What has not been factored into the mix is the reality of two paradigm shifting interventions by Yeshua Ha Maschiach, Jesus the Messiah which permanently changed the course of history:

1. Yeshua sanctified Servitude as Service! He reversed the decree of the man Noah concerning pathway to leadership. Where Noah pronounced rulership as a function of inheritance by Shem and Japheth (Genesis 9:26-27), Yeshua declared that in the Kingdom of Elohim, the only way up is down, through Service. Service is not hereditary but an exercise of the will to decrease and be an instrument of blessing others:

**Matthew 20:20-24 (KJV)** *20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him. 21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom. 22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able. 23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father. 24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren. 25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. 26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; 27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: 28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

It is noteworthy that Yeshua did not just teach this principle, He demonstrated it while washing the feet of His disciples in John 13:1-17. Interestingly, Service is the redemptive gift of descendants of Ham. Whereas it worked negatively as servitude in the Slave Trade era and during apartheid, this grace is what qualifies every Christian of every race for leadership and greatness in the Kingdom. That this revelation was not caught and taught has robbed many saints generally and those whose roots are in Africa specifically, the awesome capacities they have for leadership.

Let us also note that whereas the Slave Trade was inhuman and evil to the extreme, the Lord turned it around for good: through it, He gave sons of Ham a portion in what would be the greatest modern Empire in contemporary history: The United States of America. African Americans are today 13.2 percent of the population! In this way, they have a secure place to be part of the redemptive mantle of Elohim on America!

2. Yeshua became the Lamb of Elohim to take away both the Sins of the World as well as cancel by His death on the Cross, all hand writings of Ordinances that were contrary to those who believe on Him! It is unfortunate that throughout the centuries, this reality of the finished work of the Cross has not been emphasized by Christian Religion. Accordingly, multitudes of Christians have remained in the yoke of ignorance believing that their color was the problem or that their fate rested in the hands of fellow humans!

**Galatians 3:13-14 (KJV)** *13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: 14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.*

**Colossians 1:12-23 (KJV)** *12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: 13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: 14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: 15 Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: 16 For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: 17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. 18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. 19 For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell; 20 And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven. 21 And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled 22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unreproveable in his sight: 23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;*

**Colossians 2:9-15 (KJV)** *9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. 10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13 And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; 15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.*

In effect, with and through Yeshua, all the comparative advantages the House of Shem and Japheth enjoyed over the House of Ham was permanently broken.

### The Baton of the gospel in the House of Ham

The Redemptive purpose of Elohim for Africa has been expressed since the days of Abraham who Elohim specifically designated as a carrier of the Seed of the Woman. When he was in danger of starvation, it was to Africa that he was preserved. When Jacob and all Israel was in danger of starvation, it was to Africa that they were sent and preserved. When Yeshua, Jesus was born and Herod the Edomite sought to kill Him, it was to Africa that He was preserved as prophesied. When Yeshua was to go to the Cross, it was an African, Simon of Cyrene who helped Him to carry the Cross.

In the Last days when the gospel program suffered severe disfigurement into Christian Religion at the hands of the seed of Japheth (who with the mantle of Enlargement expanded it worldwide), Yeshua did not abandon His Own Church to remain in a state of ineffectiveness. Since the Church went into bed with the world from around AD 311 (through the patronage of Constantine the Great), Holy Spirit had more or less been pushed to the margin of Church life. He was no longer the quintessential Factor, Teacher, Guide, Revealer of Yeshua and Power of the Church. On the other hand, human beings virtually ran the show, using their finite minds to comprehend things of the Spirit (an impossibility according to 1 Corinthians 2:14).

At various places in various times, Yeshua intervened with ready and available vessels, calling the Church of their generation back to embrace the ministry of Holy Spirit. The Wesleyan Revival; the Welsh, Hebrides, Scottish, Topheka outpourings all had limited effect.

With the failure of the Church out of Europe, the House of Japheth to maintain purity of the Gospel, it was His good pleasure to recourse to the unlikely: The House of Ham and use His remnant therein – to start a short and sharp period of unusual prominence in the gospel programme. From the revelation granted this vessel, the baton came upon the House of Ham during the Azusa Street Revival in Los Angeles, California

But something was radically different with the Azusa Street Revival of 1906. Holy Spirit not only fell on a son of Ham, ex-slave, William Seymour, he became the leader and poster man of this particular visitation. It has been said without question that Azusa Street was in a sense, like the original Day of Pentecost. This is because the effect of this Pentecostal experience became globalized in line with the Acts 1:8 mandate of Yeshua. It has since then become the catalyst of hundreds of revivals in different parts of the world with Pentecostals now numbering approximately 279 Million (according to Pew Research)

The world has witnessed record shattering manifestations of Divine Power since Azusa Street:

- i. The Gospel has been preached in power by ministers of all races filled with Holy Spirit with signs and wonders following them
- ii. Gospel crusades have witnessed response of sinners in their hundreds, thousands, tens of thousands and even millions across the world
- iii. Through TV, Satellite, cable and Social Media, Iron Curtains of Ideology (Communism, Socialism); Religion (Islam, Buddhism, Hinduism, Sikhism, etc.) have been penetrated with souls won below the radar
- iv. Multitudes of Churches have been planted across the world including in the remotest of places
- v. Many saints have enjoyed successes in this life through financial prosperity, elevation in public service
- vi. From 1906 till recent times, Pentecostalism and the Charismatic Movement have been the most-lively arms of the Church together accounting for about 586 million or more than a quarter of the estimated 2 billion Christians on earth.

### Negative Outcomes of the Hamitic Dispensation

It was to be the shortest of the relay races involving the three branches of the human family: Shem; Japheth and Ham. Like Shem and Japheth before, the dispensation of Ham failed to deliver to humanity, the simplicity and purity of the Gospel of Yeshua, Jesus and the Kingdom of Elohim. It failed to produce sons of Elohim who are fit for purpose co-laborers with Yeshua in the vineyard of the Father, functioning as the Royal Priesthood after the Order of Melchizedek. That failure is manifested in these features:

**1. Nimrodic Leadership:** In many Churches, the need for strong leadership is emphasized out of proportion. Founders of ministries tend to own and control the brethren, micro-managing their lives under the guise of providing effective covering. Wherever the will of saints are taken over and they serve unwillingly or to please humans, their service becomes automatically defective.

2. **Levitical Priesthood:** The years spent in the wilderness of life has created a desire by leaders to be recognized as such. The simple pattern of priesthood modeled by Yeshua, Jesus and which He is High Priest of: Melchizedek Priesthood has been jettisoned for the more 'visible' type which He made defunct: the Levitical priesthood with the robes.
3. **Nicolaitane tendencies.** For this reason, too much emphasis is placed on Protocol, titles, and robes for leaders. This has led to an attraction for the Episcopal system with hierarchies. In many places, leaders are revered as 'founders' of churches by their congregants. The tendency to call saints 'my member' is more widespread in the Black Community.
4. **Black Theology.** Not realizing that certain things of history were either orchestrated by Satan or allowed by Elohim for a season, there have been Black preachers who have reconfigured the Bible to create what they consider a favorable view of their race. In this theology, Blacks are the real Hebrews; Yeshua was Black. There is a mixture of Judaism and Christianity in others.
5. **Pseudo-Prosperity Gospel.** Because of the intense suffering and deprivations of the past, many African and African-American preachers embraced the Pseudo-Prosperity gospel. Some of the principles taught were clearly biblical. Unfortunately, by not teaching about consecration to Elohim, holiness, and responsibility for the Great Commission, this Theology was basically unbalanced and defective. This utilitarian approach to the gospel presents Elohim as an indulgent Father Who exists basically to give His children what they want. Rather than invite people to live for Elohim, it ends up making Christians want Him to live for them. This fosters idolatry on a continual basis.
6. **Co-dependency.** In the bid to make people co-dependent, Preachers have devised all types of things to increase the faith in their power, rather than in the Person of Yeshua and the Finished work of the Cross. The mass of church goers are programmed to have faith in the prayer shawls, hand kerchiefs, oil, water and whatever else the preacher 'anoints' as a point of contact with his/her power.
7. **Syncretism, Occultic Tendencies.** From ordinary points of contact, many preachers have veered into dark realms of syncretism (the mixture of biblical Christian practices with things from the occult). This manifests in various types of prayers where people are led into realms of utterance that amount to angel worship, intruding into astrology, palm reading, and such things.
8. **Gospel of Racial Animosity.** Many African and African-American preachers have allowed their emotions to be trapped in hurts for mistreatments inflicted by people of European descent (Slavery, Apartheid, etc.). The result is constant feeding of the flock of Yeshua the poisoned chalice of racial animus. There is no space in such hearts for racial reconciliation in the natural or the unity of the Faith Yeshua prayed for. Unfortunately, Satan regularly opens the wounds with social issues like Police brutality and unequal criminal justice as well as government ideologies which are indifferent to the needs of the poor, weak, oppressed and women. In this atmosphere, evangelism is confined within the racial community rather than to all sinners. This practice runs counter to the message of the Cross.
9. **Gospel of Self-Esteem.** Many African and African-American and African-Europeans have over the past 50 years gravitated towards helping their congregants to be confident and exhibit healthy self-esteem. In the process, the 'successful' preacher is defined by the quality of clothing and thing worn; perfume,

type of car owned, and houses owned and accumulation of stuff as evidence of 'success'. Christians are then invited to come and tap into the anointing for success which he or she carries.

10. **'Holy Entertainment'**. Many ministers have gravitated to situations where their preaching with charismatic gifts are combined with imposing personalities, music, 'prophetic dance', mime, drama and many other things which minister to the flesh. Devoid of sound and systematic teaching of the Word, people are lulled to sleep and spiritual death as they are pumped up into the wild excitement of the flesh falsely labeled as visitations of Holy Spirit.

11. **ABC Christianity**. When people are conditioned to see the building, they go into or organization they join as Church, the basis is laid for systematic error. The result is an excessive deployment of modern advertising techniques to increase Attendance which simply is to pack people into designated Buildings. Ultimately, the target of much of what is done is to get the Cash out from their wallets into the Church till.

12. **Liberal Theology**. Responding to injustice and oppression suffered by the race in the past (and in some cases the present), many African-American preachers over the years have developed a soft spot for Civil rights. In the process, issues the Bible define clearly as toxic to Kingdom life such as immorality (of all types) are treated as 'Civil rights'. The tendency to embrace what Elohim decries is not considered contradictory. Those who are discerning will note that Barack Obama was miraculously made 44th President of America to seal the Hamitic dispensation in the Political arena. Unfortunately, he was groomed in a liberal gospel by his former Pastor Dr. Jeremiah Wright. The result is that he not only championed liberal causes at variance with biblical injunctions but promoted them with the full force of his authority. The rest, as they say, is history.

13. **Not empowering the Flock**. To worsen matters, the various failings of the African and African American gospel leads to situations where the environment and church pattern are not conducive to the empowerment of the Flock. Many saints go to church almost all their lives and yet do not know their identity in Yeshua; do not become His disciples and have no viable pathway of walking in Kingdom purpose. Meanwhile, they are 'good' church folks.

14. **Diminished Emphasis on Evangelism**. Most Africa and African American Churches would have turned the world upside down if they had launched out in the strength of the anointing of Holy Spirit to launch out in the Great Commission. Unfortunately, there has been a tendency to be content with looking inwards to the degree that enlargement has been compromised. Worse still the scars of the past created an aversion to reach out to people of Caucasian and Latino stock. The outcome is the existence of inward looking black spiritual communities.

### The Divine Warning that was Ignored

With the benefit of hindsight, it can be clearly seen that the Gentiles, represented by the seed of Japheth and seed of Ham, made the same mistake that the seed of Shem made: turning the Gospel of the Kingdom into the gospel of Christian Religion! Christians from both races subjugated the gospel of the Kingdom to their cultural roots and experiences. In so doing, the Gentiles ignored the express warnings of Holy Spirit uttered through the pen of Paul the apostle in this passage:

**Romans 11:12-13, 17-22 (KJV)** *12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness? 13 For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office:*

*17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree; 18 Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee. 19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. 20 Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: 21 For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee. 22 Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.*

**Romans 11:24-25, 30-32 (KJV)** *24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? 25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.*

*30 For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief: 31 Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy. 32 For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.*

Elohim is no respecter of persons and does not change his standards! The raw truth is that through the three dispensations, it is clear to all who are honest that this scripture is fulfilled:

**Romans 3:23 (KJV)** *23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;*

This failure of the three branches of the human family in running their respective laps of the Gospel project did not take Elohim by surprise! Their collective failure was designed to make room for the emergence of a brand-new Race: The Elect Remnant of Elohim who is redeemed from all races, tribes, tongues and are found in all locations worldwide. They have existed all through the millennia since Pentecost, preserved from the corruptions that destroyed the gospel during the Semitic era. Their exploits are recorded in the Acts of the Apostles. When the larger wing of the Church went into adultery with the Roman Empire, the Elect Remnant went underground and were preserved by Grace.

Throughout the days and years since 1906, the Remnant of Elohim did not get drawn into the negative features we discussed in this chapter. It is that Remnant who Elohim will use to close out the human age. His clear instruction to the Remnant to be His Radiant Bride of Yeshua in the earth realm with guidance on how to live in love and walk in unity as His sons and Ambassadors of His Kingdom are clearly articulated in the Holy Writ. That is the essence of Part F of this ground-breaking course: Completing the Unfinished Reformation!

### Review Questions

1. Please summarize this chapter in as brief a manner as you can
2. Please share any 7 of the failures of the gospel since the Azusa Street Revival of 1906 that particularly touched you.

## Chapter 64

### Section F: Biblical Blueprint for Final Reformation

#### Introduction

The great events of the Protestant Reformation triggered by Martin Luther with the Ninety-Five Thesis he nailed to the door of All Saints Church in Wittenberg on October 31, 1517, has been treated as an end in itself. For that reason, it ended up as a foot note in the long march of history. No better evidence can be produced than the reality that majority of those who are branded as 'Protestants' do not understand what that term really means. A better paradigm is called for! And it is this: The events of 1517 were the beginning of a process of Reformation of the Church. It was the beginning also of a process of Restoration of the Lordship of Yeshua, Jesus and all Truths which had been lost to Mystery Babylon and its false Religious narrative of the Gospel. It was the beginning of a process of Revival which would affect the personal spiritual health of saints which would, in turn, transform the corporate life of the Church. Instead of the cold, power hungry Religious organization which Rome had turned the Church to be, the Reformation was supposed to trigger off a process of reviving its original outlook as a living, loving organism of living Body parts: The very Body of Yeshua, Jesus in the earth realm.

While men slept, to use a phrase popularized by Yeshua Himself in Matthew 13 Satan sowed the tares of Religion in both the Reformation flagged off by Martin Luther as well as the rigid positions with which other Reformers like John Calvin held onto the insights they received, denying them the balance provided by the whole counsel of Elohim. Various visitations of Holy Spirit in the earth realm after 1517 have also been short circuited by saints when they boxed them into religious experiences confined within denominations. A typical example is the out pouring of Holy Spirit at Azusa Street, Los Angeles in 1906. Holy Spirit is given to revive the Church as a whole, not create a Pentecostal denomination! By doing just that, humans created another Religious Box among the existing slew of such Boxes! Instead of transforming and renewing the Body of Yeshua, the work of Holy Spirit was basically channeled to create another Religious wing of Christian Religion. Those outside that box roundly rejected Holy Spirit, deeming Him as having finished His earthly work on the Day of the original Pentecost in the Upper Room at Jerusalem.

As those upon whom end of the age has come, we have the privilege of the Long March of History and Time to look back at the past with clear eyes as Holy Spirit reveals the things that went wrong so He can show us how to cooperate with Elohim to bring about the true Kingdom Church that will be ready for the return of Yeshua, Jesus. This section of the Course will, therefore, provide us a download of the mind of Elohim – as clearly articulated in the Holy Scriptures concerning the way forward! We shall cover here as said earlier what is required of both the individual saints as well as the Body of Yeshua as corporate entities (whether at the Local Assembly, City Church or network level). The questions posed by the then persecutor of the Church, Saul and the Jailor at the City of Caesarea, Philippi are relevant here for all whose hearts are sincere in seeking to please Elohim:

**Acts 9:6 (KJV)** *6 And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.*

**Acts 16:30 (KJV)** *30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?*

Brethren, let us let go of our various perspectives, based on cherry picked Scriptures. That way, we can have open hearts and minds to receive and walk in the whole counsel of Elohim. The words of Paul to Timothy about the potency of the whole counsel of Elohim to bring about a complete transformation of life is worthy of affirmation:

**2 Timothy 3:15-17 (KJV)** *15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. 16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: 17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

### What we must do at the Individual Level

It is not enough to 'name it and claim it' that one is saved or a saint of Elohim. The safest approach is to weigh our current lives and lifestyles based on the Holy Scriptures! No saint can afford the toxic diet of presumption when the end of the age is speeding towards a climactic end. From the day of Salvation till the day of ultimate redemption, either by death or the rapture, is a process of time. During that time, the enemy will attempt to seduce saints from the life of holiness unto the Lord. It is the duty of every saint to resist him steadfastly in the faith and overcome his wiles! Those who obey this simple instruction will find the Grace of our heavenly Father in Yeshua is sufficient to see them through all such solicitations of Satan.

**James 1:12-16 (KJV)** *12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. 13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man: 14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death. 16 Do not err, my beloved brethren.*

**1 Peter 5:8-9 (KJV)** *8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: 9 Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.*

Let us, therefore, receive from the word, a plan of action on how to be ready for the return of the Lord.

- Examine our lives as individuals to detect the presence of Sin: Thought, words, attitudes, and deeds which do not reflect the new nature received from Yeshua.

**2 Corinthians 5:17 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.*

**2 Corinthians 13:5 (KJV)** *5 Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?*

To consciously come to the Father not to ask for bread and butter but to seek deliverance from any sin is to seek life! The worst thing that can happen to a saint is to be dominated by besetting sins!

**Hebrews 12:1-4 (KJV)** *1 Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, 2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. 3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. 4 Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.*

Besetting sins are those saints commit without thinking! They suggest a life in which Sin, rather than Yeshua is Lord – is a contradiction in terms!

**Romans 6:1-18 (KJV)** *1 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? 2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? 3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? 4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7 For he that is dead is freed from sin. 8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: 9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. 10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. 11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. 15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. 16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? 17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. 18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.*

While it is true we should have righteousness rather than sin consciousness, the reality is that sin is sin! If saints are truly holy, they will not live in sin as a lifestyle! Yes, they may stumble occasionally but as 1 John 2:1-2 says, they will obtain cleansing and justification before Elohim. What hyper grace preachers have done – whether those who robustly propound a jaded perspective of Eternal security or those who tell saints their sins are not recorded in heaven because they are automatically righteous (even when they sin) – is to give Saints license to march blindfolded to hell while holding onto the placebo of false Grace! Grace does not lead to Sin and sinfulness but to Righteousness and Holiness! There is no doubt whatsoever that Satan's best interests are served when Saints believe doctrines which make them prone to sin; comfortable in sin, and unconcerned about imminence of end of the age! Preachers who give saints the license to be comfortable with sin and sinfulness are in effect false shepherds because they work against the interests of the King, His Kingdom, and eternal destiny of souls committed to their trust. It is the hireling spirit at work and they will answer for this tendency on the last day.

**1 Timothy 4:1 (KJV)** *1 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;*

**Ephesians 5:5-7 (KJV)** *5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. 6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for*

*because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.*

True saints awaiting return of the Lord owe themselves the responsibility to rely on Holy Spirit and the Word, not preachers/teachers and their emotions to assess where they are on the road to eternity! Let us see from the Holy Scriptures those who are saved can miss it and if they remain in the wrong lane, will end up excluded from the ultimate destination which is the manifest Kingdom! As we read the scriptures below, let us deliberately give Holy Spirit right of way, just as David desired in Psalms 139:23-24 to pinpoint the exact sins which may have gained access so they can be dealt with by conviction of Holy Spirit; true repentance, confession, and forsaking so Holy Spirit will release Grace for holy living.

**1 Corinthians 6:9-20 (KJV)** *9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, 10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. 11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. 12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any. 13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. 14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power. 15 Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid. 16 What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh. 17 But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit. 18 Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. 19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? 20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.*

**Galatians 5:13-21 (KJV)** *13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another. 14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. 16 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. 18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. 19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*

**Ephesians 4:17-32 (KJV)** *17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, 18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19 Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. 20 But ye have not so learned Christ; 21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. 25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. 26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: 27 Neither give place to the devil. 28 Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good,*

*that he may have to give to him that needeth. 29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers. 30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. 31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: 32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.*

**Ephesians 5:1-8 (KJV)** *1 Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour. 3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; 4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. 6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them. 8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light:*

**Colossians 3:5-9 (KJV)** *5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: 6 For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience: 7 In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them. 8 But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. 9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;*

**Hebrews 6:4-9 (KJV)** *4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, 6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame. 7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God: 8 But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned. 9 But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.*

**Hebrews 10:26-31 (KJV)** *26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, 27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. 28 He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: 29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? 30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.*

**James 4:17 (KJV)** *17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.*

### **The Golden Key: Don't Get Stuck but Rather Grow in Grace!**

It is for this reason saints are expected to make their callings and elections sure by growing in Grace!

**2 Peter 1:5-11 (KJV)** *5 And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; 6 And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; 7 And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity. 8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. 10 Wherefore the rather,*

*brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall: 11 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.*

When Saints stop growing, they get stuck in a posture of religion, seeking to please Elohim and gain His approval through activities they do on certain 'holy' days inside 'holy' buildings. That is how religion creeps in and take hold as an alternative to vibrant personal relationship with Elohim through the Grace of Yeshua released by indwelling Holy Spirit! True Grace empowers us to live holy unto the Lord! To sustain a lifestyle of holiness is to grow in Grace.

**2 Peter 3:18 (KJV)** *18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.*

The final reformation will produce saints who every day are in expectancy of return of the Lord!

**Hebrews 9:27-28 (KJV)** *27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: 28 So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.*

Because of this, they do not take chances with Satan, Sin, or their own flesh! They deal with every stumbling on a case by case basis, with transparency and sincerity and obtain the promise of currency of their Justification in the sight of Elohim!

**1 John 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: 2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.*

**Galatians 5:13 (KJV)** *13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.*

### Review Questions

1. Whose interests does it serve that saints can sin, remain in that state and are not bothered because of false teachings of Grace?
2. What is your personal resolution going forward regarding Sin and Sinfulness (Thoughts, Words, Attitudes, Deeds)
3. How useful did you find this chapter?

## Chapter 65

### Imbibing the Glorious Truths

Individual Saints need to walk in the 16 Glorious Truths which are very liberating! As part of the final reformation, we need to acknowledge the reality that Christian Religion cannot make anyone perfect because of the leaven of Babylon which corrupts the free gift of Grace. Many believers brought up in the ways of Christian religion struggle with the identity issue: Programmed to believe they are perpetual sinners, though saved by Grace. This sin consciousness mindset sets many up for a life of constant struggle to accept the reality that they are saints of Elohim.

1.2 Accept the Reality that the all the Glorious Truths which collectively make up the New Covenant are for real in the lives of saints

For these things to be experiential in lives of saints, there is a real need for those who are in Yeshua to accept the reality of certain glorious truths that are grounded and settled. The glorious Truths are radical blessings Yahweh offers whoever will accept His call for translation into His Kingdom. They are the true heart of the glorious gospel of Yeshua, Jesus and the centerpiece of what constitutes our Kingdom life in the present which distinguish saints from the world around. In so doing, the Glorious Truths show why the gospel is called the Good News. These glorious truths should shape the true identity, world view, and lifestyle of saints and truly make them live an “other world life”.

These truths are different from the dry doctrines or church dogma new believers are forced to memorize or recite in so-called discipleship classes. These blessings, which all saints need to receive and appropriate by faith, as gifts from our heavenly Father in Yeshua and walk in our new creation realities. All who are truly saved – notwithstanding their racial backgrounds, geographic locations, gender or age need to know and manifest these truths as real life experiences!

**Caveat:** Teaching these truths to those who are not truly converted from Satan, Self, and World dominated life (and are not planning to do so) to know them mentally, recite and ‘claim’ is a perversion of the gospel of Yeshua and the Kingdom!

**#.1. Grace.** It is by Grace sinners are saved through Faith they exercise in the finished work of Yeshua. Grace is also the life of Yahweh in Yeshua and His strength that is the basis of the new life of the redeemed. Without Grace, saints will live a dry religious life free of the vitality that comes from their vibrant relationship with the Father. Grace is manifested in Mercy and Favor which sets saints apart from their contemporaries and on a higher pedestal of glory (Ephesians 2:1-8).

**#.2. Election** – Salvation did not just happen. Well before foundation of the world, Elohim had chosen them in Yeshua out of His love and mercy to be part of His glorious family in the earth realm. Though this has been His plan for all, the paradox is that only the remnant actually responds to this Divine lifeline! Election is based on the reality that Incarnation of Yeshua was not a plan B after Adam and Eve sinned. Well before humans were created, He had offered Himself as propitiation and therefore slain before time as Revelation 13:8 says (Ephesians 1:3-6; Romans 8:29-30).

**#.3. Redemption.** Saints are redeemed through the blood that was shed at the cross of Calvary. He gave His life so that saints may live! Redemption is a total reality: deliverance from Satan's rule; from the power of Sin; from the Curse on the earth realm as a result of Sin of Adam and Eve; redemption from the Curse of the Law and all the dimensions thereof; To be redeemed is to be bought back from a wrong master (Romans 3:24).

**#.4. Justification and Righteousness.** This is the pronouncement that seals the deal of translation from sinner to saint for those who truly repent of their sins. It is the act of being counted blameless with no record of past sins in heaven as they were truly blotted out by the Blood. The outcome is peace with Yahweh and a good conscience free of guilt because there is no record of the past that was fully atoned for on the Cross (Romans 4:35; Romans 5:16; Romans 3:21-22).

**#.5. New Creation.** Though there are billions of people on planet earth, those who are the true members of the family of Elohim and citizens of His Kingdom are so because they are His New Creation in the earth realm. There is a change of nature that occurs within their innermost being – the spirit man where the Elohim type of life replaces the Old which was born in sin and ruled by Satan (2 Corinthians 5:17; Ephesians 2:1-3).

**#.6. Adoption.** Here, the former sinner and enemy of Yahweh is made a member of His family and translated or conveyed into the Kingdom. Our adoption begins as children and progresses to sons. Sonship speaks of maturity so that we take responsibility for maintaining the estate of our Father in the earth realm (Romans 8:15; Ephesians 1:5).

**#.7. Position.** Based on what happened at the Cross, the saint has a shift in position. Whereas he/she was a full earthling, there is now a paradigm shift by which though still physically in the earth realm, the spirit-man of the redeemed is seated with Yeshua in heavenly places (Ephesians 2:1-6). Saints in effect are far above all principalities, powers and negative influences which rule the earth realm.

**#.8. The Mobile Temple of Holy Spirit.** The obverse side of the truth in #.7 is the reality that saints are mobile Temples indwelt by Ruach ha Chodesh, Holy Spirit. In this setting, they literally carry Him wherever they go and He will show up if they accept this truth by faith. The analogy is the Ark of Testimony which Israel physically transported whenever they moved camp (1 Corinthians 6:19-20).

**#.9. Security.** The redeemed of Yeshua have a double layer of security in Him and Yahweh that they need to know and walk in. When this truth sinks in, fear will automatically jump out of their lives so that they walk boldly as lions (Colossians 3:1-3; Psalm 91).

**#.10. Dual Citizenship.** Saints are in effect, dual citizens. They are first citizens of the Kingdom of heaven while they are planted as its Ambassadors in specific nations in the earth realm. Their primary loyalty is to Yeshua their redeemer and there is absolutely no question that His word rules their lives. Yet His word requires saints to love, respect and honor temporal leaders of their earthly nations and obey laws, except where such will lead them to sin (Philippians 3:20-21; 1 Peter 2:11-15).

**#.11. Show piece of Elohim.** The redeemed of Yeshua are the showpiece of Yahweh who He wants to showcase. Our manifestation as His sons in the earth realm both in the now and in the world to come is

something He yearns to bring to pass because it demonstrates His goodness (Ephesians 2:10; Romans 8:16-23)

**#.12. Guaranteed Outcomes.** Saints are guaranteed that while on their earthly pilgrimage if they remain in the center of the will of their heavenly Father and trust Him with their future, all things will work together for their good and are therefore part of the process of their maturation and perfection (Romans 8:28-39)

**#.13. Walk/Live by Faith, not by sight.** Saints begin the eternal journey by Faith and continue therein. By Faith they can relate with the Supreme Spirit Being that Elohim Is. (2 Corinthians 5:7; Mark 11:22-24; Hebrews 10:35-39; Hebrews 11:1,6). In effect, Prayer is the vehicle through which Saints release their Faith as they communicate with their heavenly Father on a spirit to Spirit basis!

**#.14. Inheritance.** Sons have an inheritance from their Father. It is the full benefits of being in Yeshua, Jesus in time and in eternity. They are the Covenant Blessings of Calvary cross which Satan uses ignorance to offer them pseudo-blessings such as he did to Eve in Eden. (Ephesians 1:3; Romans 8:31-32; 2 Peter 1:3). These are gifts of grace to be received, appreciated and appropriated by Faith. All saints are to walk in them and by so doing, announce to people within their spheres of influence whose they are and where they are going. Paul spoke of this reality with confidence in a tough situation.

**Acts 27:23 (KJV)** *23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,*

**#.15. Sealed unto Day of Redemption.**

In consideration of the awesome promises of eternal life and inheritance in the hereafter which we considered in the last truth it is needful to note Elohim did not just state His intent. He went further to seal the deal of eternal life in saints by the Person of His Own Holy Spirit.

**Ephesians 1:13 (KJV)** *13 In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,*

Out of the estimated 7.5 (+ or -) Billion people on earth, only those who He Himself knows as truly redeemed by the Blood of Yeshua have this seal of Holy Spirit!

**2 Timothy 2:19 (KJV)** *19 Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.*

**2 Corinthians 1:21-22 (KJV)** *21 Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; 22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.*

**2 Corinthians 5:5 (KJV)** *5 Now he that hath wrought us for the selfsame thing is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.*

**Ephesians 4:30 (KJV)** *30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.*

This seal measure of Holy Spirit is not actively taught in the major wing of the Christian Church in this generation. When we know this truth, it is easy to understand that it is this point the spiritual DNA of Yahweh as Father is imparted into the redeemed. This seal measure of Holy Spirit basically writes the spiritual profile of the saint by the root gifts that are imparted thereby. This is what defines what role

the saint will play in the Body of Yeshua as he or she grows in grace. The Truth of Holy Spirit as Seal of Redemption is a powerful motivation to remain in the faith, resist Satan, Sin, the World, and Flesh and be a yielded instrument in hands of Holy Spirit. The consciousness of the seal will open a saint to receive three additional dimensions of Holy Spirit: He is the Catalyst of Transformation of our character to make it conform to that of Yeshua. (Fruit of the Spirit Galatians 5:22-23; Philippians 1:6; Philippians 2:13). He also unites us with other saints worldwide because we are of one spirit with them (Ephesians 4:1-6; Galatian 3:26-26). He also releases the measure of power with which we can Demonstrate Yeshua, Jesus (Acts 1:8).

#### **#.16. Delegated Authority of Yeshua, Ambassadors of the Kingdom**

Saints are not just redeemed to fold their hands and wait for the Day of the Lord. That is one of the errors Christian Religion foisted upon 'church members' of various denominations. This theological error has crippled many saints to live 'normal' human lives that are selfish and self-centered, contrary to the basic operating system declared by Yeshua, Jesus to Paul which is selflessness:

**Acts 20:35 (KJV)** *35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give than to receive.*

The redeemed are automatically enlisted in the Diplomatic Corps of the Kingdom of Heaven to represent the King in the earth realm! This is not a good idea or suggestion but a fact and reality which explains why we are not translated to heaven immediately we are saved (which would have been the safest guarantee to make it into eternity and avoid all the temptations and challenges that invariably trail the saved). Yeshua, Jesus said it all when He prayed to the Father asking that His saints be preserved from evil, not taken away from the earth realm John 17:6-16.

In one of the best parables illustrating the reality that there is ambassadorial work to be done while we are alive on earth, Yeshua charged His disciples and us to occupy until He comes:

**Luke 19:11-13 (KJV)** *11 And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear. 12 He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.*

We have serious work to do during the span of time allocated to us in the earth realm! The Ministry of Reconciling sinners to their Father is at the heart of this assignment to occupy

Great in power as they are, the business of reconciling sinners to the Father is not given to angels because they are not human. It is a spiritual responsibility given to those redeemed out of human kind to be instruments in the hands of the Lord to reconcile others.

**2 Corinthians 5:17-21 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. 18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. 20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye*

*reconciled to God. 21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*

It is not just about crunching numbers of those who respond to the gospel and profess faith in Yeshua, Jesus! Saints engaged in the ministry of reconciliation have the added responsibility of discipleship – turning those who believe on Yeshua, Jesus to become His followers

**Matthew 28:18-20 (KJV)** *18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. 19 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: 20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.*

The business of discipling others is a function of spiritual reproduction: Like begets like! If those who preach and teach are disciples or followers who have submitted to the Sovereign rule of Yeshua, Jesus as their King, the kingdom business of enabling other believers to be disciples will be easy:

**2 Timothy 2:2 (KJV)** *2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

This responsibility is worldwide starting from our local communities to our Provinces, States, Nations, and worldwide.

**Acts 1:8 (KJV)** *8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*

It is also to be an assignment which does not end until Yeshua returns – by which time, the last person ordained for Salvation would have been brought in!

**Matthew 24:14 (KJV)** *14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*

A careful reading of Acts 1:8 reveals Holy Spirit is given to be the Ambassadorial Credential of the redeemed! In addition, saints are vested with the authority of the Name of Yeshua, Jesus to undertake the assignment. With the Power of Holy Spirit within and authority of the Name of Yeshua, Jesus on their lips, saints are empowered as His delegated authority in the earth realm.

**Luke 10:19 (KJV)** *19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.*

**Mark 16:17 (KJV)** *17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;*

The Alpha Church knew, taught, and practiced the delegated power of the Name of Yeshua, Jesus and saw mighty manifestations.

**Acts 3:6 (KJV)** *6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.*

**Acts 4:10 (KJV)** *10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.*

**Acts 4:12 (KJV)** *12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*

Opponents of the gospel tried to shut down the mighty move of Holy Spirit in that era, they went for the jugular: forbidding them to preach or teach in His Name!

**Acts 4:18 (KJV)** *18 And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus.*

**Acts 5:40 (KJV)** *40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.*

If we can only comprehend the height, depth, and breadth of the awesome love of Elohim manifested in the vicarious death of Yeshua, Jesus at the Cross, we will with hearts full of gratitude, love Him with all our hearts, minds, and might. All attempts to cling to the flesh will dissolve! In gratitude, we will surrender the throne of our hearts to Yeshua to reign supreme as Sovereign King. In that situation, our will is fully yielded to our Father so that Holy Spirit is given right of way to lead us in all things. This becomes our defining attribute!

**Romans 8:14 (KJV)** *14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

## Conclusion

Understanding and accepting the Glorious Truths will set saints free from Sin consciousness! They, therefore, empower them to accept the reality we all have been made saints of Elohim through the exchange that took place on the Cross. It is acceptance of those truths which lead to a reckoning of themselves to be dead indeed to Sin and rather alive unto the righteous nature of Yeshua their Lord

**Romans 6:11-12 (KJV)** *11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.*

**2 Corinthians 5:17, 21 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.*

*21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*

To believe one is saved without accepting the reality of sainthood will lead to both a religious mindset and constant struggle with sin. Sainthood is an existential reality of Grace which needs to be accepted wholly by faith. When accepted, it releases grace to live holy unto the Lord and heightens more awareness when suggestions from Satan come into the thought realm. They are recognized as alien to His nature. This, in turn, causes a saint to refrain from nurturing such imaginations but rather to reject and cast them down (Philippians 4:8; 2 Corinthians 10:3-6). This warfare of the mind and heart leads to a life of victory in the practice of righteousness which is the basis of 24/7 holiness to which we are called in the first place.

**1 John 3:3-10 (KJV)** *3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure. 4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. 5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin. 6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. 7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. 8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. 9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.*

Can saints sin? Yes, they can stumble, but not consciously. True saints detest sin because they recognize it as a work of Satan. But, there are times when saints are tripped over when off guard. Should a saint stumble into a sin in such circumstances, the Father requires a response of humility to be open to a conviction of Holy Spirit, quick acknowledgment of same and prompt repentance which sets the stage for justification to take place immediately. Because Elohim sees this inclination of the heart from the view point of His Omniscience, there is no break of Fellowship

**1 John 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: 2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.*

Those who live this way are truly ready for the return of the Lord at any minute! They are earnest for His return and therefore fulfill the condition for participating in the rapture of saints or resurrection of the dead in Yeshua.

**Hebrews 9:27-28 (KJV)** *27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: 28 So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.*

**1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 (KJV)** *13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. 14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him. 15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. 16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17 Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 18 Wherefore comfort one another with these words.*

**1 Corinthians 15:50-55 (KJV)** *50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. 51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. 55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?*

The reality that sinners can be made saints and yet issues can arise if they are careless which requires them to repent is critical to the understanding of the New Covenant. The Epistles of Paul the Apostle

which warned of sins and exhorted on the way to maintain their spirituality. were all written to saints, not sinners as Romans 1:7 and 1 Corinthians 1:2 reveal.

### Review Questions

1. Please describe any or some of the Glorious Truths which you need to come into the experiential reality of or grow in.
2. As one who will teach others, how useful is this chapter?

## Chapter 66

### Making the 6 Fundamental C's a Way of Life.

#### # 1.3. Individual Saints need to make the 6 Fundamental C their realities

The 16 Glorious Truths represent blessings of Grace the Father freely offers His sons in the earth realm. We do not earn them because they are gifts of Grace. They reveal the great esteem Elohim has for those who are called by His Name in the earth realm. His desire is to decorate them with virtue and grace that marks them out as extraordinary relative to other earthlings. The whole idea is to enable us to live the quality lives required as Ambassadors of His Kingdom, holy and unblameable in His sight.

**Ephesians 1:3-6 (KJV)** *3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: 4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: 5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, 6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.*

From the beginning of time, however, Elohim created human kind with a special facility called the will. With the will, human beings have the capacity to choose to receive His love or refuse; choose to obey Him or not. It was the exercise of the negative exercise of the will by Eve and Adam which brought about great disaster to humankind: separation from Elohim (Genesis 2:15- 17 Genesis 3:1-7)! The consequence of disobedience was swift and painful!

A snapshot of the loss can be found in Genesis 3:7-19. The rest, as it is said, is history! But, it is significant that even before Elohim punished Adam and Eve, He provided for redemption!

**Genesis 3:15 (KJV)** *15 And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.*

In due season, The Seed manifested as Yeshua and through Him, human kind was offered the opportunity to reconnect back to Elohim, on His Own terms. He forces His Salvation on no one:

**John 3:16-19 (KJV)** *16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.*

Salvation by grace is the entry point into the Kingdom of Yahweh. As we have seen from this passage, acceptance of the free offer of eternal life in Yeshua, Jesus involves the exercise of the human will to respond in faith. In the same way, growing in grace and moving from one degree of light to others is entirely dependent on the way the redeemed exercise their will relative to the Word and will of Elohim. There are many who will dwell too long on the mountain of salvation by grace. If they do not make further progress, they may end up in dead religious works and activities as 2 Peter 1:5-11 reveals. Holy

Spirit is ever-present to enable saints to see the glory of the depth of the riches of Yeshua that lies ahead. As many as responding to the promptings of Holy Spirit to forsake the familiar and take a plunge into the depths of the grace of Yahweh in Him will discover the blessed state of their new life in Him!

True saints should never ever forget that His Salvation, Elohim requires obedience to His will, expressed in His Word.

**John 15:10-14 (KJV)** *10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. 11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full. 12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. 13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. 14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.*

To claim salvation and yet walk in self-will which leads to sin and sinful tendencies is a contradiction of epic proportions! One of the reasons why Yeshua came in the Flesh was to show us a vital secret for walking in intimacy with Elohim: lay down our wills and take up His Own!

**John 4:34 (KJV)** *34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.*

**John 5:30 (KJV)** *30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.*

**John 6:38 (KJV)** *38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.*

Submission of our will to Elohim means we will not make haste to decide what to do or take action on anything until we know, by how He speaks to us what is the will of Elohim!

**Isaiah 28:16 (KJV)** *16 Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.*

This lifestyle, when imbibed, will lead to a state of righteousness, Peace, and Joy in the Holy Spirit; will free us from anxieties, worries, and presumptuous sins!

**Isaiah 26:3 (KJV)** *3 Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee.*

It is the true evidence of the death of self and acceptance of the Sovereign rule of Yeshua as King over our lives. The surrender of the will is what will enable saints to respond properly to the 16 Glorious Truths. That response, which in any case comes from His Grace leads to the manifestation of the 6 Fundamental C's as hallmark of saints who provide evidence, by their manner of life, that they are His remnant in the earth realm! The interesting thing is that Elohim has by His Spirit provided sufficient Grace for His saints to live according to His will! He is the one Who supplies Grace

**Philippians 1:6 (KJV)** *6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:*

**Philippians 2:13 (KJV)** *13 For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.*

The 6 Fundamental C's

In view of the glorious truths Elohim presents to His Redeemed (apart from chapter 65, please read up the entire text in GSOM Course 104: The 16 Glorious Truths), there is a matching responsibility from those who are His own to ensure that His grace is not despised, squandered or misused.

**2 Corinthians 6:1 (KJV)** *1 We then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.*

The issue we deal with in this chapter is extracted from GSOM Course 105: The 6 Fundamental C's. Collectively, they advance a simple thesis: As we receive the holistic blessings that are part of the Grace package our heavenly Father bestowed on us, without charge, based on the Finished Work of Yeshua on the Cross of Calvary, He has invested us with the capacity to respond to His Love in a way which aligns us with Him in His will and nature. That level of bonding He and Yeshua enjoyed is available to all of us who are His sons in the earth realm!

**John 17:21 (KJV)** *21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.*

What kind of responses does He require from His redeemed so that they can grow in grace to be all He ordained them to be?

**2 Peter 3:18 (KJV)** *18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.*

For ease of reference and to foster simplicity of application, the six core responses of the truly redeemed to the unlimited love of the Father in Yeshua are these:

## **1. Conversion**

**Acts 3:19 (KJV)** *19 Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.*

This is the change of mind and heart arising from true repentance from Sin and receiving of Yahweh's salvation in Yeshua. Conversion is the fruit of genuine holistic repentance. Without Conversion, an individual is still in sin. Mere repentance of any thought, word or deed that one was convicted of will not do. As we will see, Conversion is that point at which the encounter with Yeshua, Jesus is so real that it manifests as new life in Him. Those who are truly converted bring forth the fruits of repentance which is righteousness.

**2 Corinthians 5:17 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.*

**Matthew 3:8 (KJV)** *8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:*

Those who are truly converted manifest a deep and unconditional love of Elohim and gratitude for what Yeshua accomplished on the Cross. They also love the brethren and all humans. It is the responsibility of all saints living in these end times – with all the baggage of uncertainties - to avoid the deception of religion which makes human beings to glory in rituals without heart and approval of humans. We all

have a duty to sincerely answer the question: are you truly converted with evidence of a new nature based on an experiential encounter with Yeshua? Or, are you living a religious life.

## 2. Consecration

This experience is based on these scriptures:

**Romans 12:1 (KJV)** *1 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.*

**Matthew 16:24-26 (KJV)** *24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. 26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?*

**Galatians 2:20 (KJV)** *20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*

Consecration is the act of complete surrender to Yahweh to live for Him wholly. Those who enjoy the experiential reality of the 16 Glorious Truths are those who die to self-interests and are wholly consecrated to Yahweh and live for His supreme purpose. When they are yielded totally to Him like this, His Zoë life (nature and life of Elohim) flows through them. Consecration implies the sacrifice of our entire beings to the degree that they no longer serve any selfish or self-centered purpose. Rather, Elohim uses our beings as vessels of honor for expressing His Will, Presence, and Power!

**Psalms 50:5 (KJV)** *5 Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice.*

Saints living in these last days need to realize that the only place of safety is the Consecrated life: one totally immersed and hidden in Him!

**Colossians 3:1-3 (KJV)** *1 If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. 2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. 3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.*

**1 Peter 4:1-2 (KJV)** *1 Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin; 2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.*

## 3. Commitment

This is based on proper understanding of the reality that the King and His Kingdom cannot be subordinated to any other pursuit, otherwise, an idol is in operation in hearts of saints.

**Matthew 6:19-34 (KJV)** *19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: 20 But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: 21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 22 The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. 23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness! 24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. 25 Therefore I*

*say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? 26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? 27 Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? 28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: 29 And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith? 31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? 32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. 34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.*

Commitment is the act of single minded pursuit of the Kingdom and its righteousness as the primary goal of the redeemed on planet earth. This single-minded pursuit of the Kingdom un-clutters their lives to release a sense of Divine Purpose and strategic direction. In this mode, the saint is delivered from the clutches of Satan, the deceptive attractions of the world system and the ambitions of the self-nature.

With this deliverance, the glory of the aroma of Yeshua, Jesus in them is unleashed, making them the flames of fire they are supposed to be: passionate and burning with zeal for His glory in all situations. Saints in this mode become tasteful as salt and penetrating as light which dispels darkness. By being committed to the King and His Kingdom, they cannot be comfortable inside the stifling boxes of religion called denominations! Those who are unable to make this commitment are mere professors, rather than possessors of the Kingdom! Their empty religious slogans mask the reality that self, represented by their belly (what to eat, drink, clothes to wear, jobs, career and houses to live in) drive their lives and priorities! Those who want to work for Yahweh without first walking with Him tend to be religiously inclined hirelings and fair-weather Christians. When there are blessings, they loudly proclaim their affinity with The Creator. But when expected blessings do not come through or seem delayed, they vent their anxiety, doubt, unbelief and even worse, some backslide or go into apostasy. For such people, their real god is their belly!

**Philippians 3:17-21 (KJV)** *17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample. 18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: 19 Whose end is destruction, whose god is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)*

Those who desire to labor in the vineyard of the King must never forget the real deal of the new life we have in Him and the ultimate prize. Our esteem of the ultimate prize should be so great that we are willing to forsake all else to obtain it!

**1 Corinthians 9:24-27 (KJ V)** *24 Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. 25 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. 26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: 27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.*

We need to shift emphasis from chasing after the anointing of Holy Spirit for selfish purposes (fame, popularity, wealth) to unending hunger for an intimate relationship with our Redeemer and function as sons of the Most High in the earth realm.

#### **4. Communion**

**1 Thessalonians 5:17 (KJV)** *17 Pray without ceasing*

Communion is the act of being in continual fellowship with Yahweh; conversing with and seeking directions from Him in all things. A life of Communion implies unbroken fellowship arising from hearts connected with Elohim and the Throne of Grace on a 24/7 basis. With that kind of alignment, saints posture as midwives for birthing His determinate counsel in the earth realm. We hear His will, pray same and therefore become useful instruments of ordering the earth realm with Him. Communion also describes a life of true fellowship based on love with other saints who are citizens of the Kingdom. This happens when saints are bonded together in Him as Head and in each other, releasing and receiving Grace for building up of the whole Body. True communion is possible when the Fivefold – Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, and Teachers – are fully engaged in ministering to the saints in an organic, rather than organizational paradigm as Ephesians 4:11-16 reveals.

**Ephesians 4:15-16 (KJV)** *15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.*

#### **5. Call**

**John 15:16 (KJV)** *16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.*

**1 Peter 2:9 (KJV)** *9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light;*

In the New Covenant Kingdom Church, ALL (not a few or some) saints in the Kingdom are called by Yahweh to serve as priests and kings, ministering to Him, His people; fulfilling the transformational assignment of the church in our environment as the salt and light. They are fully invested in continuation of His Mission Statement to seek and save the Lost

**Luke 19:10 (KJV)** *10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.*

**2 Corinthians 5:17-21 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. 18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. 20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. 21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*

**Matthew 5:13-16 (KJV)** *13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.*

The Priesthood after the Order of Melchizedek is what all saints are called to! It is totally different in nature and form from the Nimrodic and Levitical Priesthoods that are popular in Christendom.

**Hebrews 5:5-6 (KJV)** *5 So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee. 6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.*

It is for this reason that all saints are blessed with spiritual gifts as instruments of ministering to Elohim, other saints, and society. To know and exercise our spiritual gifts is to perform our priestly duties at the most primary levels:

**Romans 12:5-6 (KJV)** *5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. 6 Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith;*

**1 Corinthians 12:4-7, 11-12 (KJV)** *4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. 6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. 7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.*

*11 But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will. 12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.*

**Ephesians 4:7-8 (KJV)** *7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. 8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.*

The spiritual gifts we have been given are not trophies to be admired but rather divine instruments for accomplishing the assignments committed to our trust. To remain ignorant of them is to court disaster on the last day as Luke 19:11-27 reveals. That is why saints are encouraged to discover and deploy all their spiritual gifts for Kingdom service, knowing fully well that a day is coming when the King will require full accounting!

**1 Peter 4:10-11 (KJV)** *10 As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. 11 If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.*

The Melchizedek order is universal < for all saints of all ages, gender, and socio-economic backgrounds> while the other two are exclusive preserves of a priestly caste which act as mediators between a 'holy God' and an 'unholy people'

## **6. Clinging**

**John 15:1-8 (KJV)** *1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. 3 Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. 4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. 6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. 7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.*

All saints are also called to abide in Yeshua for He is our life! In Him alone we live, move and have our being. The saint who is serious about eternity understands and walks in the reality that as long as we cling to Yeshua as our life by abiding in Him and giving His Word space to be grafted and made flesh/abide in us, our will easily gives way to His will. As we learn to depend on Holy Spirit and surrender our will to Him we are enabled to cling to His Person and voice.

In this way, He uses our beings to release the quantum of Grace that is needed at any given time. As long as He guides us in all things, our Salvation will not only bear abundant fruits but more importantly, we will grow in Yeshua to live like Him as sons of Elohim

**Romans 8:12-14 (KJV)** *12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. 14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

When we cling in this way, all the storms the enemy can activate are stripped of the power to impact us negatively

**Romans 8:28-39 (KJV)** *28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. 29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. 30 Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified. 31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us? 32 He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? 33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. 34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. 35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? 36 As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. 37 Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. 38 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, 39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

It is when we cling to Him – despite all the storms of life, that His Great Grace in us becomes evident. Whatever we go through, let us be encouraged by the experience of Paul the Apostle to realize that clinging to Him makes all the difference!

**2 Corinthians 12:7-10 (KJV)** *7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. 8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. 9 And he said unto me, My*

*grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. 10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.*

### Conclusion

It is essential that saints get away from tendencies to cram their brains with dry dogmas for purpose of engaging in religious debates with those who believe otherwise. In the same way, engagement in cultural wars with unbelievers and sinners has little or no value in the Kingdom. The key is for saints to understand that the new life we have in King Yeshua produces real evidence of newness of life. It is the responsibility of saints to cross check our lives relative to each of these 6 experiences. Any experience which is missing represents a chink in the armor of Kingdom life.

### Review Questions

\*\*\*Please study this teaching note on your own and do the assignment

## Chapter 67

### Recovering the Lost Axe Head of Kingdom Life

We are still downloading the blueprint of how saints ought to live in order to be ready for the return of King Yeshua and the end of all things. Let us consider these 10 realities that Elohim desires to see in those who are saved by His Grace. Interestingly, He undertakes to supply more grace to enable saints to walk in them.

**1. Rooted in the Word by diligent study of the whole Scriptures.** The end time saints must return to a life that is word based. We are born again by the Word

**1 Peter 1:23 (KJV)** *23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.*

The Word is to be made flesh to the degree that Holy Spirit quickens its provisions as moral compass of our lives

**John 14:26 (KJV)** *26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.*

Our Thoughts are pure when they line up with the Word

**Philippians 4:8 (KJV)** *8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.*

This is a function of the renewing effects of the Word which challenge worldly culture in the mind to replace it with Kingdom culture

**Romans 12:2 (KJV)** *2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*

**Ephesians 4:23 (KJV)** *23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;*

The Word within our hearts is the greatest insurance against presumptuous sins

**Psalms 119:9 (KJV)** *9 Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to thy word.*

**Psalms 119:11 (KJV)** *11 Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee.*

Those who know the Word cannot be easily misled by Preachers sent by their bellies or hell

**Ephesians 4:14 (KJV)** *14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;*

Knowing the Word makes saints wise to the degree that they cannot be co-dependents of Nimrodic preachers and Teachers nor can they fall victim to Levitical paradigms of priesthood. They can spot error and decline to follow religious ways which take people outside the Kingdom

**2 Timothy 3:15-17 (KJV)** *15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. 16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: 17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

For those called to ministry or already in Ministry, it is only through thorough study and application of the Word that they can please the King of Kings and excel.

**2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV)** *15 Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*

When ministers know the Word, they are less likely to play with it! Just as was reported about the saints at Berea in the Alpha Church, we on who end of the age has come need to be diligent about searching the Scriptures, not allowing ourselves to be intimidated by the personalities of preachers and teachers/

**Acts 17:10-11 (KJV)** *10 And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither went into the synagogue of the Jews. 11 These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.*

**2. Effective, Unbroken Communion with Holy Spirit in real time.** It is not about loud expressions of tongues or other showy actions that Pentecostalism has taught ministers and saints to do inside human boxes called 'Churches'. It is rather getting to a much deeper and intimate relationship with Him based on these things:

The reality that He is the Seal of our Salvation.

**2 Corinthians 1:22 (KJV)** *22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.*

**Ephesians 1:13 (KJV)** *13 In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,*

**Ephesians 4:30 (KJV)** *30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.*

To make the matter more critical, He lives right within our beings!

**1 Corinthians 6:19-20 (KJV)** *19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? 20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's*

In effect, true Communion ensures when we receive Him as the Divine Personality He Is within us, not an external 'It' we can switch on (during 'Church services' inside a building) and off (at home, in the work space and society) at will!

Our Communion is enhanced when we receive Him as the Divine Personality assigned to be with us, comfort, guide and strengthen throughout our earthly pilgrimage in the Body.

**John 14:26 (KJV)** *26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you allthings, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.*

When these things are settled in our hearts, we are inclined to submit to His leadings and promptings which are a vital mark of sonship.

**Romans 8:12-14 (KJV)** *12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. 14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

Accepting His empowerment through exercise of spiritual gifts and callings

Ultimately, it is Holy Spirit Who uses the Word to Comfort us in all situations, provides us the internal stability which comes from being truly invested in Kingdom business

**Romans 14:17-18 (KJV)** *17 For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. 18 For he that in these things serveth Christ is acceptable to God, and approved of men.*

To Him is given the capacity to enable us to enjoy the Divine Presence in a tangible way. To attune our ears, hearts, and minds to hear Him in real time through a lively conscience is perhaps the greatest insurance against all evil and guarantee of success from a Kingdom perspective.

**3. Live Holy unto the Lord. Elohim begat us to live on earth, just as He Is.**

**1 Peter 1:15 (KJV)** *15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; 16 Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.*

Sin and sinning are not part of His nature but rather part of Satan and our old natures. In the normal order of things, our natural ways of thinking and past experiences can come in between us and true holiness. That is why we need to recognize all tendencies within our inner beings - especially the Soul's compartments: Mind (thoughts); Will (decision making); Emotion (attitudes/feelings) – which are earthly. Dissatisfaction with carnality will position us to accept the offer of Elohim to sanctify our hearts wholly. Our Father is willing to sanctify us completely so that we can enjoy the fullness of our new natures.

**1 Thessalonians 5:22-24 (KJV)** *22 Abstain from all appearance of evil. 23 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. 24 Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.*

**4. Live in Love.** With renewed minds and hearts submitted to Holy Spirit, there is no room for struggle to see things as they are. Our heart is more inclined to love Elohim, all saints, and all people just as He requires.

**Matthew 22:37-40 (KJV)** *37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38 This is the first and great commandment. 39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets*

Yeshua made Love the central plank of Kingdom Culture. There is no way around it!

**John 13:34-35 (KJV)** 34 *A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

**John 15:12 (KJV)** 12 *This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.*

Walking in love makes us manifest the DNA of Elohim Who Is Love personified. While the capacity is in us, it is still imperative for all saints to reject any tendencies that are contrary to it as a lifestyle

**Ephesians 5:1-2 (KJV)** 1 *Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.*

**5. Make Faith our Kingdom Lifestyle.** We became the new Creation of Elohim when by Faith we appropriate the Grace of His Salvation.

**Ephesians 2:8 (KJV)** 8 *For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:*

In effect, the DNA of Faith which belongs to our Father Yahweh is imparted to us but only needs to be activated by choice of obedience.

**2 Corinthians 5:7 (KJV)** (For we walk by faith, not by sight:)

When we choose to walk by Faith, impossibilities disappear from our consciousness! We are rather emboldened to become vibrant Ambassadors of the Kingdom, calling things that are not as if they are. It is in this way that mountains of life are moved.

**Mark 11:22-24 (KJV)** 22 *And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. 23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. 24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.*

**Hebrews 11:1, 6 (KJV)** 1 *Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.*

6 *But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.*

**Hebrews 10:35-39 (KJV)** 35 *Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward. 36 For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise. 37 For yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry. 38 Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him. 39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.*

When natural humans behold how we live, they marvel and are open to being like us which prepares them to receive the word. A life of Faith is infectious! It distinguished Abraham so much so that Elohim asked His saints of all ages to emulate this virtue in him,

**Romans 4:17 (KJV)** 17 *(As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were. 18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be. 19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sarah's womb: 20 He staggered not at the promise of God through*

*unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; 21 And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. 22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.*

**Isaiah 51:1-2 (KJV)** *1 Hearken to me, ye that follow after righteousness, ye that seek the Lord: look unto the rock whence ye are hewn, and to the hole of the pit whence ye are digged. 2 Look unto Abraham your father, and unto Sarah that bare you: for I called him alone, and blessed him, and increased him.*

**6. Walk in Unity.** Our King, Yeshua made Unity one of the dominant features of His Kingdom Church which, when unbelievers see manifested in saints, open them up to believe. To walk in line with His desire becomes imperative!

**John 17:20-23 (KJV)** *20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; 21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.*

Miracles, signs, and wonders become common place when saints live in love, are aligned to Yeshua and each other, walking in unity. It makes prayers more potent, producing the right outcomes!

**1 Corinthians 1:10 (KJV)** *10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.*

**Matthew 18:19-20 (KJV)** *19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. 20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.*

That is why Elohim warns saints to throw out of fellowship, divisive people who work against unity of saints!

**Romans 16:17-18 (KJV)** *17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. 18 For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.*

End time saints cannot afford to live isolated lives. The Spirit of Grace in us yearns to connect us with others who have the same seal.

**Hebrews 10:25 (KJV)** *25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.*

Those who refuse to accept this Kingdom reality end up with all kinds of afflictions that vex their spirits. To recognize that we are not alone in the quest for immortality is the very basis of embracing the remnant of all ages in various parts of the world. This is where social media like Facebook – with 2 billion users – becomes a vital tool of Kingdom Connection and Community. Let us use it wisely.

**Romans 11:1-6 (KJV)** *1 I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. 2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel saying, 3 Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. 4 But what saith the answer of*

*God unto him? I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal. 5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. 6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then it is no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.*

To walk in unity requires active cooperation with Holy Spirit Who enables us to make choices that foster a bonding rather than dissipation of strength in the community of saints

**Ephesians 4:1-5 (KJV)** *1 I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, 2 With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; 3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4 There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.*

**6. Make Prayer a lifestyle rather than an event.** Prayer is in a sense, the highest expression of humility and statement of total dependency on Elohim. What the Lord shared with us concerning communion in chapter 66 is worth reminding here. The life of praying is one of reporting regularly to headquarters of the Kingdom: The Throne of Grace for instructions, Insight, directions and to draw down Grace for representing our King with distinction. Those who pray regularly, hear from Elohim and do as directed do not easily get buffeted by the storms of life nor are they distracted from the course they are set on by Him.

**Luke 18:1 (KJV)** *1 And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;*

Our King had a regular habit of settling issues with His Father in prayer, early each day. So, should we.

**Mark 1:35 (KJV)** *35 And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.*

As 1 Thessalonians 5:17 says, we should also pray without ceasing.

**7. Service.** King Yeshua is very clear that His Kingdom in the earth realm is marked by a lifestyle of service. Service enables us to lovingly and willingly be invested in seeking well-being of others, not ours. It is a lifestyle of being poured out for the benefit of others, for their edification, the highest expression of selflessness!

**Matthew 20:20-28 (KJV)** *20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him. 21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom. 22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able. 23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father. 24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren. 25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. 26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; 27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: 28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

When we imbibe the culture of serving one another, the Spirit of Grace is let loose upon any group of saints who are connected by Him. All are blessed and all are edified. That is why our spiritual gifts should be seen as what they are: instruments of service, not personal exaltation or pride!

**Romans 15:1-3 (KJV)** *1 We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves. 2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification. 3 For even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me.*

Yeshua deemed the issue of sufficient import that He modeled what it means to serve others by washing feet of the disciples. John 13:1-17 When leaders release all that the Father placed in them for the benefit of building up saints towards their destinies, they are doing likewise!

**8. Doing Kingdom Business with everything we are and have received from our Father.** Our entire spiritual assets (eternal life, spiritual gifts, callings); Persona (physical features and carriage); Physical Assets (Money, Resources) as well as Social assets (Businesses, Jobs, Position in Society; Goodwill; Esteem) are to be consciously laid down at the Feet of King Yeshua so that He uses them all to advance His Kingdom in the earth realm. That is how we occupy! Luke 19:11-13

Those who lay down 100 percent of their total assets in this way make a sure investment of themselves which the Lord has promised great rewards in Time and eternity! To serve in this way requires profound confidence in Elohim as a righteous judge Who will, in His Own set Time bless the Faithful

**Matthew 19:29 (KJV)** *29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.*

**9. Impacting the Society with the transformative substance of the Kingdom Salt and as Light:** This is the Ministry of consciously doing good to impact those outside the Kingdom on His behalf and preserve our spheres of influence from the effects of Satan and the Fall.

The reality of Kingdom life is that though Yeshua wants us to be separate from the world, He does not mean it to be a life of isolation behind walls of Monasteries and Abbeys. Rather, He wants us separated from the influence of the prince of the power of the air and worldly culture which is corrupting so that we can engage with them as Kingdom ambassadors. In this regard, He wants Saints positioned as His Salt and Light!

*14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.*

Salt preserves things it is applied to from corruption or decay

Salt adds value which brings forth taste

As individuals, we are to be the extended hands of Elohim to touch the poor, homeless, weak and vulnerable such as prisoners, ex-offenders and all on the margins of society.

**Matthew 25:31-40 (KJV)** *31 When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: 32 And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate*

*them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: 33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. 34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: 35 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: 36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. 37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? 38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? 39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? 40 And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.*

**Galatians 6:9-10 (KJV)** *9 And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. 10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.*

**10. Eternity Consciousness.** True saints of the Omega Church do not just crunch the days of life, chasing 'success' like their natural companions. They live for a higher purpose! Their citizenship, being in Heaven, they are in everyday expectation of their King and Head! This makes them live like the Wise Virgins of Matthew 25:1-13. It also enables them to avoid entanglement with the affairs of this life which are potentially toxic. Worldly amusements such as watching worldly thriller movies or entertainment to feed lusts of the flesh and eyes no longer appeal to them as they grow in grace.

**2 Timothy 2:3-5 (KJV)** *3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. 4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier. 5 And if a man also strive for masteries, yet is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully.*

Awake from the stupor of worldly influence, they rather redeem every moment of time to ensure they are accounted duly.

**Romans 13:11-14 (KJV)** *11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. 12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. 13 Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. 14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

The intensity of their focus on the world to come makes them overcomers of this present world system.

**Philippians 3:20-21 (KJV)** *20 For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: 21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.*

Brethren, all the things discussed in this chapter are fruits of Grace. However, knowing them brings liberation from ignorance posed by Religion. He requires saints to yearn for these experiences and their Faith to receive!

## Review Questions

1. Which of these 10 points do you need the Grace of Elohim to excel in?
2. How useful is this chapter to you personally?
3. What will you do with this chapter?

## Chapter 68

### Taking responsibility As Sons of Elohim to Walk in Victory

One of the most profound effects of Christian Religion is the systematic redefinition of the gospel to the extent that it produces religious zealots rather than sons of Elohim who function as citizens and Ambassadors of the Kingdom in the earth realm

#### **A. The reality of Sonship**

Yeshua came as a Son so that through His sacrifice, the earth realm could be re-populated with sons of Elohim! This truth has been lost since Rome and a larger wing of the Church went into marriage and began to produce strange children who are powerless members of churches! Sons of Elohim are not 'church members' but rather 'members of Yeshua' who Holy Spirit places in congregations for empowerment, mutual edification, and accountability.

**Hebrews 2:9-15 (KJV)** *9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. 10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. 11 For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, 12 Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee. 13 And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold I and the children which God hath given me. 14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; 15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.*

In the realm of Sonship, there is neither male nor female; bond or free! It is a state of heart maturity which derived from recognition of our identity in Yeshua and Who He Is in us.

**Galatians 3:26-29 (KJV)** *26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. 29 And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.*

**2 Corinthians 5:16 (KJV)** *16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.*

#### **B. Pathway to sonship**

Though called to be sons, the state of maturity is not automatically attained. The starting point is to know that by Adoption we are grafted into the holy Family of Elohim.

**John 1:12 (KJV)** *12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*

**Galatians 4:4-6 (KJV)** *4 But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, 5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. 6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.*

The reality is that every saint starts the new life in Yeshua as babes needing milk.

**1 Peter 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, 2 As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:*

Those who find themselves in congregations which operate according to tenets of Christian Religion will get stuck as Babes always needing milk. Consequently, their growth will be negative and Religious. This is because ABC Christianity (where the emphasis is on Attendance/Numbers; Buildings and Cash/revenue) makes those within its loop to be ever learning but never able to outgrow the need for milk. It is a high stake religious game which puts the spotlight on the superstar preacher or the Religious organization rather than Yeshua.

Those who swallow their evil hook tend to grow to be co-dependents. Relative to Elohim, their mindsets are either that of Orphans (never accepting love of Yahweh as a Father); unwilling slaves (who perceive Him as a hard task master that can never be pleased); Distant God (they have to scream at, cajole or tune up through various religious exertions before He can hear them) or grandchildren (who can only access Him through their real spiritual Fathers and Mothers/Pastors). Christian religion is inherently programmed not to provide saints with proper understanding of their true identities in Yeshua and the reality that they can independently enjoy a vibrant, intimate personal relationship with Yahweh as Father; friendship with Yeshua and intimate walk with Holy Spirit. To foster this evil, Christian Religion uses the wrong priesthood paradigms (Nimrodic and Levitical) to rule Christians, making them members of ministers and 'churches'.

In these last days, the final reformation is being used by Elohim to lay His axe at the root of organized Christian Religion so that the elect is liberated to know their true identities in Yeshua and grow in Him Who is their Head!

Therefore, the Yeshua leads the true Kingdom Church through the foundational office gifts of Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, and Teachers. Where there is space for the five offices to function, saints are built up in a holistic way to discover and function as living parts of the spiritual Body of Yeshua who ministers to Him and to each other so that all grow to be a living, loving organism. These scriptures collectively tell the story: Ephesians 4:7-16; Romans 12: 1-8; 1 Corinthians 12; 1 Corinthians 13; 1 Corinthians 14; 1 Peter 4:10-11.

As individual saints respond to the pure truth of the word, they grow rather than getting stuck like Religious folks.

**Hebrews 5:12-14 (KJV)** *12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. 13 For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. 14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.*

## The Growth Grid

King Yeshua clearly showed us that those He calls are supposed to grow in their relationship with Him. From the example, He set with His disciples, we note that positive growth involves these patterns

- They started out responding to His call and serving without agendas. Whatever He needed, they did, considering nothing as too menial including serving food, ushering crowds and rowing boat while He slept. This is also the way we start our service to Elohim
- He announced their transition to becoming His Friends. After serving faithfully, Yeshua Himself told them one day:

**John 15:14-15 (KJV)** *14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. 15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.*

Friendship speaks of intimacy in a relationship; openness of communicating heart to heart. We share intimate details of our lives with friends which are secrets to others. In the same way, when we move away from religious activities and rituals and desire to know Yeshua like Paul hungered for in Philippians 3:1-18, He draws us closer, revealing His heart to us. We become friends who enjoy His Presence; considering prayer and study of the word as precious rather than laborious.

> After paying the price for Sin at the Cross He announced their further transition to becoming sons of Elohim, just like Him and in a sense become like His brethren. The way Yeshua responded to Mary Magdalene on the day of resurrection offers profound insight into the reality that the way was now open for sons of Elohim, just like Him to function in the earth realm.

**John 20:17 (KJV)** *17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.*

**Hebrews 2:10 (KJV)** *10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.*

In the last days, sons of Elohim will emerge out of the cocoons of Churchianity as they get to know the Truth which sets Free! They will be the Church so radically different from Christianity Religion to the degree that they will stop at nothings from fulfilling what Yeshua started over 2000 years ago, by the instrumentality of the same Holy Spirit in them Who also empowered Yeshua.

**Romans 8:14 (KJV)** *14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*

**John 14:12 (KJV)** *12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.*

The earth has been yearning to see sons who live and function like Yeshua. Before the final age fully comes, when they will be fully manifested, they will offer a dress rehearsal for the world to see:

**Romans 8:19 (KJV)** *19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.*

It is sons who serve Father as priests after the priestly royal order of Melchizedek

### C. Some Responsibilities of sons

Sons of Elohim do not play the religious games of Roman themed Christianity. For them, the gospel has the power to transform and empower. Sonship places on them the tendency to accept responsibility for doing the will of Elohim relative to certain things:

#### 1. Manifesting His Heart by Right Attitude to Sinners

In this regard, some markers are evident:

- Sons do not engage in negative commentary on the lifestyle of sin and sinfulness which sinners prefer, lest we descend into religious arguments, debates and cultural wars where fiery speech is deployed to take down those who are not like 'us'. This is because sons know that not all humans will embrace the salvation offered by the Blood of Yeshua. Yet Elohim does not blot such people out of this world but rather is patient with them. So too are sons patient with those outside the Kingdom.
- Positively: knowing what it means to be a sinner and the bondage they are in to Satan, Sin and the Flesh drives sons of Elohim to intense intercession and spiritual warfare to pull down strongholds of the mind, heart, will, and emotion which hinders them from receiving the Truth.

**2 Corinthians 4:3-4 (KJV)** *3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: 4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.*

There is a recognition of the reality that no one can come to the Father except Holy Spirit penetrates their cloud of darkness to convict of sin and reveal Yeshua

**John 6:44 (KJV)** *44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.*

#### 2. Manifesting the Father's heart with Right Attitude to Governments and human authorities

The Father did not make a mistake in placing us in the earth realm where we and natural humans are citizens of same nations, under civil authorities. The reality is this:

- Though our primary citizenship is in heaven, we have natural citizenship of nations whose Passports we bear.
- We are called to recognize, respect, honour and obey civil authorities except in specific instances where they require us to do sinful things for which we are to be conscientious objectors (Romans 13:1-7)

**1 Peter 2:13-17 (KJV)** *13 Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; 14 Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. 15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: 16 As free, and not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God. 17 Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.*

- We are obligated to love our natural civil authorities – from Councilors, Mayors, State Governors, Legislators, Law enforcement to the President and Federal authorities – unconditionally, despite their sins, mannerisms or negative attitudes which are off putting.
- We owe them a divinely vested mandate to intercede so that we can live godly lives. While it is easy and cheap to hate on them and rail at their failures, a more excellent way is to intercede earnestly, placing their hearts, minds, attitudes, and action in the hands of Elohim Who can turn same to become instruments of fulfilling His determinate counsel for the nations

**1 Timothy 2:1-3 (KJV)** *1 I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; 2 For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. 3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; 4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.*

**Proverbs 21:1 (KJV)** *1 The king's heart is in the hand of the Lord, as the rivers of water: he turneth it whithersoever he will.*

- Just like in the natural, Kingdom Ambassadors should note that no one with a nasty attitude who brawls with authorities of host nations can succeed in their postings. That is why we must acquire Kingdom diplomatic skills! It is not about compromising with the world! Paul the Apostle modeled this style of not fighting unnecessary battles so that he could win the larger war:

**1 Corinthians 9:19-23 (KJV)** *19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more. 20 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; 21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law. 22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might, by all means, save some. 23 And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.*

It is all about operating in superior wisdom so that we engage with them from a position of superior strength which comes from the reality that the Greater One is in us. The reality is that the day of Judgement is still in the future when all those Elohim granted the privilege of temporal rulership will account for the great responsibilities committed to their trust. Sons of Elohim do not judge things before their time. In any case, sons of Elohim also know about a strange truth: Elohim knows why He created some rulers for in the earth realm.

**Romans 9:17 (KJV)** *17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.*

### 3. Dealing with the Critical Adversaries of Denominationalism

Denominationalism is a box in which saints are sealed away from the larger Body, from revelations that will bless them, and from the full measure of the anointing they need to excel. End time saints who want to be all that Elohim has made them to be will deliberately obey Yeshua Who desired and prayed to the Father for Unity of saints (John 17). Accordingly, they will:

- Relate with saints from other ministries and congregations discerning by Holy Spirit where they are in their walk with Yeshua. They will be used to positively impact those they can and draw strength from those who have something to offer.
- With the explosion of social media and mass communications, end time saints will discern those in the Fivefold who Elohim has given aspects of His whole counsel; revelation and anointing which is pure and free of Nimrodic hooks. They will tap from them, what they lack in their local assemblies and leaders without shame, knowing that those are gifts from the Father. They will resist any attempt to draw them away from leaders the Lord gave Pastoral oversight of their lives
- In other words, end time saints will not allow their spiritual leaders who operate in mono or dual gift dimensions to prevent them from tapping into the grace of the full Fivefold. They will open themselves up first however to be the missing 'folds' in this way, Ephesians 4:11-16 will still be fulfilled in the Body. For some saints whose Pastors are extremely insecure and roundly reject the Truth about the Fivefold, the saints will at some point make a choice: to detach from them and go to find fulfillment in healthier Kingdom communities
- This also applies to congregations where spiritual gifts are not given space to flourish
- All saints who are serious about the return of Yeshua will not stay in congregations and ministries which function as tombs of their destinies. Once they discern Nimrodic leadership patterns which 'own' saints and keep them in pews to produce tithes and offerings, they will take a stand for Yeshua. As they open up to Holy Spirit, He will lead them to kingdom communities (congregations and networks where the Teach, Train, Equip, Activate and Release process is in place. These environments will in effect function like hatcheries which empower saints to be all that they were redeemed to be

4. Sons enforce victory of Yeshua over Satan in spiritual warfare: Take on the whole Armour of Elohim at all times, always battle ready!

It is one of the most serious breaches of Kingdom life that the average saint is not well equipped to do spiritual warfare in these last days when Satan is unleashing the full measure of his evil machinations. Two approaches to Satan are entirely wrong:

- Those who exalt Satan to the degree that saints fear him
- Those who deny the reality of Satan and therefore fall victim to his wiles. He therefore steals, kills and destroys among both those who overrate and those who underrate him.

The safest place to be is to stay in the word and know that with Yeshua in us and us in Him, we have the victory over the enemy! True saints who are the Omega Church have been clearly equipped by Elohim to be overcomers. The Blood of Yeshua is still the greatest weapon to neutralize Satan and his evil cohorts.

**Revelation 12:10-12 (KJV)** *10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their*

*testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. 12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.*

Sons of Elohim have the capacity and grace to enforce the victory of Yeshua over Satan on the cross. They know that seated in heavenly places with Yeshua, they are elevated far above Satan and all his cohorts.

**Colossians 2:6-19 (KJV)** *6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him: 7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. 8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. 9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. 10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13 And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; 15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. 16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: 17 Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ. 18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, 19 And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.*

Accordingly, sons of Elohim are to stand on the solid ground of having the whole armor of Elohim on at all times so that no matter how Satan chooses to operate, they cannot be caught off guard.

**Ephesians 6:10-18 (KJV)** *10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. 11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. 13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. 14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; 15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: 18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;*

**Further reading:** Critical Adversaries; Prayer, Fasting & Spiritual Warfare available for free download on the website [www.kingdombooksclub.org](http://www.kingdombooksclub.org)

### Review Questions

1. Which of the truths shared in this lesson made the most impact on you?
2. What will you do with this lesson?

## Chapter 69

### Assured Victory Over the Spirits Which Work Internally

Contrary to the profile of weakling subject to Satan and the elements of nature, the new creation of Elohim is ordained to be a powerful being in the earth realm, walking in total victory, based on what Yeshua procured at the Cross!

The victory purchased for saints by the Blood which Yeshua shed is a comprehensive one to be cashed by Faith.

**1 John 4:4 (KJV)** *4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.*

We so far have dealt with how saints should have victory over Sin; the Flesh; Self; Denominationalism and Satan. Let us today focus on how sons of Elohim rate and deal with two other adversaries: one internal to the Self-nature and the other external as in the spirit which rules the world.

#### Overcoming the internal Foes

The worst internal foes are not the big giants! They are the very little foxes that spoil the vine of true spirituality!

**Song of Solomon 2:15 (KJV)** *15 Take us the foxes, the little foxes, that spoil the vines: for our vines have tender grapes.*

True spirituality is who we are when no one is watching: that aspect of lives of saints known only to the Omniscient and Omnipresent Elohim. Because many saints do not even truly know themselves, drifting into a delusion of spirituality is a very real thing.

Saints living in the age when the possibility of Yeshua returning is imminent must push the limits to be truly whole internally! For that reason, there must be particular attention to ensure that these sins and weights do not find hiding and holding space within the heart:

**1. Offenses/ought plus vengefulness:** – these are negative reactions of the heart and mind to negative things saints experience in everyday life. When offenses come, the pure heart and mind knows it immediately because there is an immediate distortion of the Philippians 4:8 mindset. Let us remember that our King, even Yeshua has already given us advance warning that as long as the earth remains, offenses will come. And He gave us a radical formula to deal with offenses – right at the root!

**Matthew 18:7-9 (KJV)** *7 Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh! 8 Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. 9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.*

There is a direct co-relationship between holding and nurturing offences and eternal destination of saints! Imagine that a saint may not commit any of the so called 'gross sins (immorality, murder, fraud) but end up in eternal damnation because of offences! Let us beware and be foolish so that we can walk in perfection before Elohim!

To ensure that offences do not corrupt the heart to the point it becomes calloused, Yeshua made a radical instruction. Equating offense with murder, He commands saints to deal with offense at the root so that true fellowship can be enjoyed with Him and with brethren:

**Matthew 5:21-24 (KJV)** *21 Ye have heard that it was said of them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: 22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. 23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.*

If only saints will diligently study the Word to know the truth which sets free! Here are clear instructions of King Yeshua about how saints should rate offense and proactively determine to deal with the various dimensions that can come up in everyday life:

**Matthew 5:40-48 (KJV)** *40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. 41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. 42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away. 43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

Because these truths are not fully taught in Churches, many saints whose hearts and minds are filled with offences against their spiritual and natural leaders; with fellow brethren and family are oblivious to the sad state of their lives – because they are not guilty of what they think are the 'gross sins'! What deception!

It is significant that the Sermon on the Mount gives us a powerful remedy: Rather than feel bad when evil such as persecution has been committed against saints, it calls for the reverse: rejoicing!

**Matthew 5:10-12 (KJV)** *10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 11 Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.*

By no means does Elohim count those who cause offense guiltless. On the other hand, they have the greater condemnation if they do not repent!

**Matthew 18:6-7 (KJV)** *6 But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. 7 Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!*

The point is this: Elohim wants to be all in all for His Own. He wants to own the offences and take vengeance. That is why He calls on His saints to give Him the opportunity to fight for them. He does this best when the saint responds with good to the evil committed!

**Matthew 5:44 (KJV)** *44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you*

**Romans 12:14, 17-21 (KJV)** *14 Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not.*

*17 Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. 18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men. 19 Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord. 20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. 21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.*

The end result of offence/ought is what the Bible calls 'Root of Bitterness'. This is when ought has congealed to an almost incurable degree and becomes hatred and therefore potentially murderous! At this stage, the grace of Elohim in the saint is at risk.

This is because one of the greatest ways to attack Grace and drain it from the life of a saint is to open the heart to receive and retain offences! Once offence enters the heart, Grace jumps out as it were.

**Hebrews 12:14-15 (KJV)** *14 Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: 15 Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;*

This weakens the capacity of saints to retain the virtue they are clothed with by Elohim. This, in turn, opens the door to Satan to afflict with internal diseases/sicknesses such as Cancer and other incurables and externally, they make saints sitting ducks of satanic plots. They also hinder prayers and cause the heavens to close to a financial breakthrough.

**1.2 Unforgiving spirit:** Satan is a vengeful being while Elohim recreated us with the capacity to forgive and forget when offended. The truth is that at such times, when offence comes by the speech, attitude, and actions of others, we have a choice to forgive, let go and allow Elohim to settle accounts (which is the godly thing to do) Or to retain the offence, refuse to let go and seek vengeance (which is what Satan who desires to break fellowship and unity wants. This can happen in the home between couples; between them and their children; between siblings; between saints in the same local assembly; between saints and fellow saints or between saints and unbelievers!

**Matthew 6:14-15 (KJV)** *14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: 15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.*

One of the reasons why a majority of saints are unable to exercise Mountain moving faith may be attributable to the little fox of unforgiving spirit lurking in their hearts and minds!

**Mark 11:22-26 (KJV)** *22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. 23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. 24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. 25 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.*

#### **Solution:**

1. Let us sincerely desire to have a conscience void of offence before Elohim and all humans, realizing that we cannot please everyone
2. Forgive unconditionally. Apologize with speed as soon as Holy Spirit convicts you
3. Desire reconciliation; pursue peace and ensure it with all diligence. In the process, people may perceive you as weak or the offender but trust Elohim Who knows that you do it for His sake!
4. In these days of social media, saints should resist the temptation to air their grievances and accumulate endorsements of their friends who do not know the full facts. This can only make the process of reconciliation more difficult
5. Have it in your heart to be a blessing to those who do you wrong
6. Let Elohim handle what is beyond us by handing over to Him

#### **2. Overcoming the world**

The Word makes it clear that overcoming the world is a done deal, sealed by the Blood!

**1 John 5:4-5 (KJV)** *4 For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. 5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?*

Unfortunately, one way Satan has rigged up his evil kingdom to ensnare saints is the way he packaged the world system under his control to be appealing to saints! The result is that many well-meaning saints who are otherwise holy unto the Lord, fail at the altar of worldliness!

Yeshua knew how the world would hold an attraction for saints and specifically prayed to the Father to deliver His Own:

**John 17:9-17 (KJV)** *9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. 10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them. 11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. 12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might*

*be fulfilled. 13 And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. 14 I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. 16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. 18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.*

## How Satan uses the world

From the first day, Satan successfully seduced Adam and Eve to sin against Elohim, he used the key instruments of the world: Lust of the Flesh; Lust of the eyes and pride of Life.

**1 John 2:12-16 (KJV)** *12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his name's sake. 13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father. 14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one. 15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. 16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. 17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.*

**James 4:4-5 (KJV)** *4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. 5 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?*

Things of the world we are to beware of:

1. The Fashion system which fosters seduction of opposite gender by showing off parts of the body which are best kept covered; True fashion should be COFA
2. Lusting after things we see or esteem too highly that we want to possess them even when not in the will of Elohim and suffer oppression when they are not received
3. Tendency to live on Credit as a result
4. Disproportionate investment in our exterior looks when less time is invested in our internal spiritual health.
5. ABC Christianity – focusing on Numbers of people who gather inside religious buildings and how much revenue are generated from them
6. Making wrong alliances – marriage, business, etc.

**2 Corinthians 6:14 (KJV)** *14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? 15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? 16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate,*

*saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. 18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*

This same principle was enunciated in the Psalms

**Psalm 1:1-3 (KJV)** *1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. 2 But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. 3 And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.*

Yeshua prayed that we be separate from the world system and the spirit of Satan which rules it. He did not mean for us to be isolated in Monasteries and Convents but rather to be detached from the corruption in order to engage with the world as Ambassadors of the Kingdom!

**2 Peter 1:4 (KJV)** *4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*

Let us receive and walk in the grace to be 24/7 ever ready for return of the Lord. In so doing, let us receive the Liberty and Freedom from yoke of little foxes with which to occupy, until He comes!

#### Review Questions

1. Which point in this lesson did Holy Spirit use to convict you of anything which needs to be sorted out?
2. What will you do with this lesson?

## Chapter 70

### The One New Man of Elohim His Remnant in the Earth Realm - Part 1

By now, the reality should hit home that the Gospel brings a change of nature in all who believe. This change occurs in the realm of the spirit-man which is neither male nor female; Hebraic/Jewish, White, Black or Latino; neither is it defined by age. The 12 disciples who walked with Yeshua for 3 and half years did not grasp this reality largely because of cultural blocks in their mindset. Yeshua had to leave the comfort of heaven for a trip to the dusty road to Damascus where He specifically arrested the then Saul, a Pharisee mentored by Old Covenant Professor Gamaliel. The unforgettable encounter of Saul with Yeshua led to receipt of a mandate which caused him to burn the bridge as he crossed the Rubicon of Kingdom consecration. His mandate which was generally well known was expressed in these words with which Ananias was persuaded to minister to him:

**Acts 9:15 (KJV)** *15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel:*

#### Situating the Pauline Epistles as a vital instrument of re-discovering Gospel of the Kingdom

One of the greatest failings of Christian religion is the failure to understand the strategically critical nature of the call of Paul and how the revelations committed to his trust are absolutely necessary for proper understanding of the nature of the present dimensions of the Kingdom (Kingdom Now/Within and Kingdom Nation) and how they properly prepare saints for the Kingdom to Come when Yeshua returns to preside over its earthly manifestation as Supreme Potentate. The reality is the four gospels are basically biographical sketches of Yeshua as Incarnation of Elohim; Fulfillment of Prophecies about Seed of the Woman Who would be Messiah of Israel and the world; the Servant King who lived among His people. The gospels document His life, ministry and teachings/preaching up to the Cross and resurrection.

To Paul was committed a critical aspect of Truth: What happened at the Cross and their implications for the divine program to re-populate the earth realm with sons of Elohim who would superintend over it as Ambassadors of the Kingdom, just like Adam did before the fall. To Paul was committed a detailed understanding of the nature, features and full assignment of the One New Man of Elohim that emerged from the finished work of the Cross. Peter who walked with Yeshua for 3 and half years and played a prominent role in the Alpha Church could not but exclaim to saints that the revelations granted Paul were extraordinary resources for all.

**2 Peter 3:15 (KJV)** *15 And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; 16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.*

Christian Religion totally lost it on this critical revelation which Paul was particular about. It leads to two realities

1. No saint should be discriminated against on the basis of Gender, Race, Age or Location

**Galatians 3:26-29 (KJV)** *26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 8 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. 29 And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.*

2. Henceforth, we should know no one according to the flesh but rather receive all according to who the Father has made them to be

**2 Corinthians 5:16 (KJV)** *16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.*

The Remnant embrace /cash the cheque (check) of Faith in drawing down all the blessings Yeshua purchased at Calvary Cross. They know, without any shadow of a doubt that all the suffering of Yeshua was to pay the price to redeem out of the earth realm a peculiar people who would have access to the treasuries of heaven for all things which pertain to life and godliness. They know that Elohim is purposeful Sovereign Who has made sufficient provisions for the assignments of all His sons and Kingdom Ambassadors. When they need anything pertaining to life and godliness, they ask their Father in Faith, counting same as a done deal.

Yet, their prayer life is not filled with lusts for stuff neither do they have the stomach to pray 'Gentile' prayers which bother on the acquisition of material things. There is such a quiet confidence in the benefice of Yahweh as a good Father that they know instinctively that whatever they need is already met. Their prayers are therefore not filled with anxiety but with thanksgiving (Philippians 4: 4-7). Rather than spend all their time asking for material things, they surrender their heart, mind, will, emotions and desires afresh on a constant basis to Elohim so His will becomes their own. Armed with His burden, they become as it were midwives of His determinate counsel and perfect will within their loops of Kingdom influence. They pray His heart and the joy of hitting the mark floods their souls, making them spectacles of how virtue can renew strength and confidence in their King. For this reason, the picture in Matthew 6:19-34 is their existential reality as they seek first the Kingdom and its righteousness. Righteousness, Peace, and Joy in the Holy Ghost define their lifestyle as Romans 14:17-18 states. The One New Man is The Remnant of Elohim in the earth realm!

One truth hidden by Christian Religion is the reality that Elohim has always gone out of His way to preserve a remnant for Himself who He keeps away from the manifestation of the spirit of the age. It was in this way Elohim preserved Abel from the spirit that dominated Cain; found in Noah and his family a remnant to be preserved from the Flood. In this way, Abraham was called out of an idolatrous and occultist environment of the Chaldeans to be the patriarch of a people group from whom Seed of the Woman would spring from. In this context, Elohim preserved the Hebrews/Jews as a remnant, out of all nations and peoples of the world who He deemed as 'Gentiles'. When Israel went into spiritual harlotry, Elohim preserved a remnant. That was how Elijah and 7,000 other of the faithful came to be.

**Romans 11:1-6 (KJV)** *1 I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. 2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel saying, 3 Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. 4 But what saith the answer of*

God unto him? I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.  
5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. 6 And if by grace,  
then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then it is no more grace:  
otherwise work is no more work.

When Rome and larger wing of the Church went into a strange marriage, Elohim preserved the remnant for Himself who was not part of Mystery Babylon. The Lord used Paul to explain the mystery of the ages: That in Yeshua, sufficient provision was made for the remnant of Elohim to connect to Him and each other as His one new man. In other words, the Remnant is the 4th Race He will use in the earth realm to close out the human dispensation! (first 3: Shem; Ham and Japheth all failed Elohim as we saw in this course!) The remnant has enough space for both Hebrews and Gentiles to cohere as one in His sight:

**Ephesians 2:1-9, 11-22 (KJV)** 1 And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; 2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. 4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: 9 Not of works, lest any man should boast. 10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. 11 Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; 12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: 13 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. 14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; 15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; 16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: 17 And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh. 18 For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. 19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; 21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: 22 In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

**Ephesians 3:1-21 (KJV)** 1 For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, 2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward: 3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, 4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) 5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; 6 That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel: 7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power. 8 Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; 9 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: 10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be

*known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, 11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: 12 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. 13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. 14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, 15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, 16 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; 17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God. 20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, 21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.*

## Some Indicators of the Remnant

The remnant of Elohim is in every conceivable 'Church' expression. Some are still unbelievers at the moment; others are still trapped in religious organizations such as Roman Catholicism and its Protestant Offspring. But because of operation of Holy Spirit Who sealed them into Yeshua's Body and Who lives within them, there is a 'knowing' that things are not right and a yearning for fullness of truth and experiential liberty from religious structures and systems. The Truth is already planted deep within their hearts as scriptures said even though they may not have the consciousness of the knowledge in their minds and brains

**Hebrews 10:16-17 (KJV)** *16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; 17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.*

When they come into contact with Truth preached or taught, there is a deep resonance within their hearts and minds! When they meet other remnant, even for the first time, there is a sense of having known them before! The reason is simple: All of the True Church of Yeshua are one in the realm of the Spirit! Their spirit-man are all connected to the Head by Holy Spirit and to one another, though they may be in different physical locations. Let us outline a few things that are indicators of being the Remnant of Elohim, His One New Man in the earth realm: Part of the Church Militant and connected spiritually to the Church Triumphant (those who have finished their earthly pilgrimage and are translated).

**Hebrews 12:22-24 (KJV)** *22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, 23 To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, 24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.*

Please note this list is not exhaustive in any way!

1. Rejection of the narrative of Christian Religion which claims that Roman Catholicism is the Mother Church. Accordingly, the Remnant is not comfortable to be branded as 'Protestants'. With time, they grow to know the reason: They are members of Yeshua as part of His Body and citizens/Ambassadors of His Kingdom. These are what define them!

2. Rejection of Denominationalism, the various Boxes of Christian Religion which divide the Body and cause her to walk in a state of an unending spiritual equivalent of a civil war. For this reason, they refuse to be confined to the camps of 'Pentecostals', 'Charismatics', 'Evangelicals', 'Full Gospel' and other labels.

3. Refusal to be rated as 'owned' by Nimrodic preachers and Levitical Organizations. They know that human spiritual leaders do not own them and should not control their spiritual and natural lives. They respect authorities and honor them but not unto foolishness of handing over keys to their lives.

4. The remnant also refused the divisions of the Body based on Race; Gender; Ages; Socioeconomic status

5. Accordingly, the remnant rejects the Christian Religion perspective of Ministry as a professional calling into a special caste restricted to a few academically qualified priests. They reject the Nimrodic and Levitical priesthoods/patterns of Ministry and their Theater paradigm of ABC Christianity (Attendance; Buildings; Cash)

6. The remnant knows the world is a snare to their souls and do not give space for its partisan politics and religious boxes to divide them from other brethren or its fashions

7. The Remnant live Holy unto the Lord as a basic quality and have a Righteousness consciousness which does not give Sin space to subdue and dominate them. Romans 6: 1-18.

8. The remnant is open to ministry from those with spiritual gifts to express, notwithstanding their gender, ages or socioeconomic situations. They do not know people after the flesh.

9. Brothers and sisters in Yeshua who are the remnant do not see themselves in terms of gender when brought together to labor in the same vineyards by Holy Spirit. They see themselves rather in terms of spiritual gifts and callings and how there is alignment. In this way, they emulate Yeshua the Head who worked closely with women, yet without Sin.

In this way also, they emulate Paul the Apostle who worked closely with various women yet without Sin (See Romans 16; Philippians 3).

10. The remnant is wired to reproduce after kind, just as Elohim ordained from the beginning in Genesis 1:26-28. They do not wait for Church Evangelism and discipleship programs before getting involved. It is their life to reproduce after kind, reconciling the lost to their Father

**2 Corinthians 5:17-19 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. 18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.*

**2 Timothy 2:2 (KJV)** *2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

11. As priests after the order of Melchizedek, they exercise Royal Authority to rule the physical world from the spiritual realm in prayer, spiritual warfare and exercise of Faith in the Name of Yeshua for

signs, wonders, and miracles to happen. They legislate in prayer, aligning with the determinate counsel of Elohim to bring same to pass. As He reveals to them secrets of things to come, they are ever ready to call forth in prayer and warfare, enforcing ordinance of the Kingdom.

12. They embrace chastisement when they err and move outside the center of the will of Elohim, knowing instinctively that the stripes of their heavenly Father come out of His love for them and are therefore in their best interests

**Hebrews 12:5-13 (KJV)** *5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: 6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. 7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? 8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. 9 Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? 10 For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. 11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. 12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; 13 And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed.*

13. Though they enjoy the full benefits of what Yeshua procured for them, they also know that until the full manifest Kingdom is established at the return of King Yeshua, there will be an occasion for suffering to be exacted for His sake. They know with their Kingdom mandate also comes various degrees of suffering which they joyfully accept. It is not that they love being 'suffer heads'. They just know that inheritance of certain dimensions of glory to come will be a direct function of what the remnant suffer for His Name sake.

**Romans 8:17 (KJV)** *17 And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.*

**2 Timothy 2:12 (KJV)** *12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us:*

14. They are not in a hurry for prominence and 'breakthrough'. This is because they accept the wisdom of Elohim Who processes His remnant before manifesting them in due season. They are willing therefore to patiently await the due or set time of Elohim (Psalms 102:13).

**Joshua 3:7 (KJV)** *7 And the Lord said unto Joshua, This day will I begin to magnify thee in the sight of all Israel, that they may know that, as I was with Moses, so I will be with thee.*

**Luke 1:80 (KJV)** *80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.*

**Luke 2:52 (KJV)** *52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.*

15. The remnant does not compete but rather complement each other, walking in alignment. In this way, they generate Kingdom synergy which unleashes the power of Holy Spirit and Presence of King Yeshua

**1 Chronicles 12:38 (KJV)** *38 All these men of war, that could keep rank, came with a perfect heart to Hebron, to make David king over all Israel: and all the rest also of Israel were of one heart to make David king.*

**Joel 2:7-8 (KJV)** *7 They shall run like mighty men; they shall climb the wall like men of war; and they shall march every one on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks: 8 Neither shall one thrust another; they shall walk every one in his path: and when they fall upon the sword, they shall not be wounded.*

16. They do not seek their 'labels' to hang on any aspect of the Church committed to their Trust. They rather release everything to King Yeshua, the Head to whom they and the brethren gather. They make it all about Him and His Kingdom and do not seek to get in the way. They therefore emulate John the Baptist to point saints to Him, not themselves (John 3:26-36). In all that they do, they posture as servants, serving Him and the saints

17. The remnant – no matter how 'blessed' or 'successful' know the glory to come when Yeshua returns to establish and rule in full dimension of the Kingdom is far greater! They are earnest for His return and it never departs from their consciousness! In this way, they are sustained spiritually and refreshed continually. Those who come in contact with them are impacted by the freshness of the Grace of Elohim in their lives and infected with same.

18. They know it is all of Grace. It is His Grace which brought them into the Kingdom and which sustains them. Relying on His Grace, they do not boast or fear but trust in His ability to uphold them as He promised.

**Jude 1:24-25 (KJV)** *24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, 25 To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.*

### Review Questions

1. Which of the 18 indicators have you noticed in your personal experience
2. How useful is this lesson to you?

## Chapter 71

### Disposition of Remnant: Ministers in the End Time

Most of the time, our attention tends to focus on the negative things of history. In lesson 70, we saw the reality that Elohim always preserved a remnant for Himself when there were mass falling away from His program in the earth realm. We also saw 18 indicators that signify an individual believer is operating in the realm of the remnant.

Amidst the gross darkness that was the religion of Mystery Babylon, Elohim tugged at the heart of German Friar, Martin Luther in 1517 that all the exertions of the flesh in religious rituals was not the way to find peace with Him. Illumination of Romans 1:17 by Holy Spirit led to his liberation from the yoke of organized religion.

He was a remnant, preserved by Grace. Unfortunately, the Reformation Martin Luther initiated was also tainted by several missteps which reveal a lack of perfection. These include blood guiltiness over the mass murder of Peasants by nobles; tendency to bicker with other reformers; the spirit of anti-Semitism which drove a tendency to replacement theology. Worse still, all that great work ended up in a denominating of truth to create a religious system with his identity: Lutheranism of the Lutheran Church essentially embraced firstly by a people group, the Germans, and their neighbors.

Ever since that year, the Lord has raised many of His remnant in different parts of the world. The emphasis has been to use them to restore certain 'lost' truths and spiritual experiences in the Church. Despite later misapplications, John Calvin received a revelation of the Majesty of Elohim and extreme vastness of His Grace like none before him. It is unfortunate he did not grasp fully the reality that Elohim in His Grace did not create humans to be robots but gave them the facility of the Will with which to choose to obey or disobey Him. Only a secure Being could take such a risk. In any case, the best of John Calvin was to lead to no more than a theology branded with his name 'Calvinism' by which the Church was divided, not united.

John Wesley and his brother Charles were used to restore the Truth of sanctification and beauty of simplified congregational meetings and leadership that is accountable. Unfortunately, all that they achieved ended up into a tunnel called 'Methodism' or the Methodist Church. The degree to which various strands of Methodism have become the liberal bastion of Christian religion does not reflect the reality that John Wesley was separate from the world in his era, lived and advocated for Holiness as a lifestyle.

William Seymour was used to advance the absolute necessity of Holy Spirit in the life of saints at Azusa Street in 1906, leading to a fresh Pentecostal experience. Unfortunately, this great blessing was not properly managed. Rather than Holy Spirit becoming a widespread reality in the global church, the best that was achieved as the creation of a new denomination Pentecostalism. Before then, the Church of God in Christ and Assemblies of God Church respectively had essentially allowed race to be the defining factor in their application of visitation of Holy Spirit.

Another thing which marked out reformers of old is they were Elijah like figures. They functioned alone or with a very small group of like-minded people. Because of that, their impact, in their various generations was substantially limited to their individual loops of influence. For this reason, the divine purpose of preparing the church on a global scale for the return of Yeshua has not yet taken place.

The reason for this is interesting: The final reformation was not given to the past generations to implement. They were instruments of starting the process. Unfortunately, the Church did not wait on the Lord to receive this revelation. That is why many ministries, denominations, and individuals have been stuck as it were on the past Mountains of revelations that were received by reformers who lived 100 - 500 years ago. Just like the Church in the wilderness, there is a call to move forward!

**Deuteronomy 1:6-8 (KJV)** *6 The Lord our God spake unto us in Horeb, saying, Ye have dwelt long enough in this mount: 7 Turn you, and take your journey, and go to the mount of the Amorites, and unto all the places nigh thereunto, in the plain, in the hills, and in the vale, and in the south, and by the sea side, to the land of the Canaanites, and unto Lebanon, unto the great river, the river Euphrates. 8 Behold, I have set the land before you: go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to give unto them and to their seed after them.*

In the economy of Elohim, what they started would be accomplished by the generation upon whom the end of the world has been ordained. In a sense, this scripture about the heroes of faith of old is now due for fulfillment:

**Hebrews 11:37-40 (KJV)** *37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; 38 (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. 39 And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: 40 God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.*

In the age, before the Church is consummated with the return of Yeshua, these features, tendencies, and trends will define remnant ministers.

1. The Word will be elevated in their esteem as the Compass of Life and Ministry! They will not allow their emotions, ideas, or worldly culture to drive their ministries! They will rather be personal students of the word, under the unction of Holy Spirit. That diligence will pay off as they are vested with grace to rightly divide the Word that is served saints. In this way, there will be no space for cherry picking scriptures to make saints 'happy'.

**2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV)** *15 Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*

This tendency will arise because Remnant ministers embrace the reality that ultimately, Yeshua feeds His flock with His word and perfects them through it. This is why the Teaching Ministry will be exalted among the remnant again. When saints begin to gather unto the Lord in His Word, their worldly mindsets are purified; cultural strongholds are pulled down and all begin to have the mind of Yeshua. Remnants ministers will realize this power of the word to grow saints to perfection is a primary reason for which they are called.

**Ephesians 5:25-27 (KJV)** *25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; 26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*

2. Though He may start off with a few people scattered across the world, Elohim will imbue them with the grace not to 'denominate' the revelations committed to their trust. Accordingly, Remnant Ministers will embrace the grace to document what Elohim is saying and communicate same to the largest possible audience.

**Habakkuk 2:1-4 (KJV)** *1 I will stand upon my watch, and set me upon the tower, and will watch to see what he will say unto me, and what I shall answer when I am reproved. 2 And the Lord answered me, and said, Write the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that he may run that readeth it. 3 For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end, it shall speak, and not lie: though it tarry, wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry. 4 Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith.*

It is time to record sermons and teaching series, transcribe them with affordable equipment, edit and publish them into books to bless a wider spectrum of saints beyond four walls of the 'church'. The motive should not be to make money but to extend the reach of truth! For that reason, low prices are recommended for truly Kingdom revelations. E-book versions can be developed for free distribution on social media and the internet.

They may use copyright laws of nations only to the degree it is necessary to prevent hijack by false brethren. Elohim will also give them the large heart to accommodate as many saints as they can empower. Remnant ministers will not discriminate against saints on the basis of what they have or not.

3. Rather than a few individual superstars, the Lord will raise a great company of remnant ministers. Across cities, counties, States, Regions, Nations and even on cyberspace, Holy Spirit will be poured out afresh on many people. It will not be a reenactment of the Upper Room experience but the emphasis will be on a fresh revelation of the Majesty of Elohim as the Thrice Holy One Who Is Omniscient, Omnipresent and Omnipotent. The reality of Yeshua, Jesus as His Incarnate revelation in the earth realm Who deserves to exercise Sovereign rule over the redeemed by Holy Spirit Who guides their everyday decisions, desires, prayers, Kingdom lifestyle, and ministries will be unleashed. Those who are empowered will make themselves available to mentor, support and promote younger vessels the Lord will call.

4. Remnant ministers will recognize and reject the extremely toxic nature of Christian Religion which makes people cling to religious activities and rituals performed inside religiously designed buildings on certain holy days.

5. They will preach and teach the Gospel of the Kingdom, not Christian Religion. Remnant ministers will not be content with preaching and teaching to their immediate local congregations. They will make a determined effort to deploy every resource at their disposal to reach as many people as possible with the Truth. This includes local, national, regional and international missions. It also includes strategic deployment of assets of Social media.

**Matthew 24:14 (KJV)** *14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*

**Matthew 28:18-20 (KJV)** *18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. 19 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: 20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.*

6. For this reason, their ministries will be used by Holy Spirit to produce sons of Elohim who are Kingdom citizens and ambassadors, functioning as Royal priests after the order of Melchizedek. Instead of remaining stuck as 'sons and daughters in the Lord' of the visionaries, they will grow to become their co-laborers and colleagues.

7. Some of those brethren will be so faithful to Elohim, the vision and visionaries that they will come alongside them to extend the grace given by Elohim in the form of achieving the organic Church structure in Ephesians 4:11-16. Some faithful brethren will willingly spearhead Church plants. Congregations and ministries planted in this way will be organically related to the headquarters ministries but will not be controlled by it.

8. These ministers will reject denominationalism with vehemence! They know the Church is One Body of Yeshua. They, therefore, regard the portions of the Body committed to their trust as parts of the whole rather than the whole. For this reason, the brethren they lead will be generally secure in Yeshua and trust Holy Spirit to the degree they can freely interact with other brethren without feeling out of place.

9. One way they will be able to do this is recognizing they do not 'own the flock'. They know Yeshua alone purchased the flock with His Own shed blood. They will serve with the consciousness that they are but under-shepherds of Yeshua:

**1 Peter 5:1-4 (KJV)** *1 The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: 2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; 3 Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being examples to the flock. 4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*

10. Remnant ministers will, therefore, emulate John the Baptist to deliberately decrease in the hearts and minds of saints they lead so they will grow in Yeshua alone who they persistently point saints to. In the deepest compartments of their hearts, they desire that saints will know Yeshua and grow in Him. They, therefore, do not glory in displaying their photoshopped posters.

**John 3:30 (KJV)** *30 He must increase, but I must decrease.*

They therefore continuously lift up Yeshua to the people as the Author and finisher of their Faith, challenging them to grow up into Him in all areas of life

**John 12:32 (KJV)** *32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.*

11. For this reason, the saints they lead will not be co-dependents, perpetually needing 'Milk' and words of 'encouragement'. They do not use sweet words to coax the saints to be in Church neither do they allow those who sin to be comfortable.

12. Remnant ministers will stay in the lanes assigned to them by the gifts of Holy Spirit and callings they know. They will deliberately create space for those called to other offices and gifted differently to find their own spaces so all will function in synergy.

12.1 One of the reasons why they function in this way is they are secure in the knowledge of the kingdom principles of 'sheep allocation'.

12.2 Only Yeshua is the Great Shepherd Who Owns and ultimately leads all His flock

12.3 In the Kingdom economy, the Great Shepherd allocates different sheep to different human vessels to Pastor them.

12.4 Without human effort, loud advertising or promotion or even with them, all the sheep assigned to them as under shepherds shall somehow connect with them. Those that are truly assigned will hear His voice through them. Those who connect in this way, as led by Holy Spirit will abide in fellowship. No one can pluck them away, no matter how 'anointed'. If such sheep are confused and misled outside fellowship, Holy Spirit of Grace will orchestrate their reconnection.

**John 10:5, 27 (KJV)** *5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.*

*27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:*

12.5 As they feed the sheep fresh food, nurture and invest in them, they will grow and abound. As they grow and mature, such brethren will take their places as co-laborers with the ministers to occupy their allotment together. Well-fed sheep bring forth three things: They get pregnant and bear other sheep, they also produce Milk and Wool, and in the spiritual realm, well-fed brethren engage in the ministry of reconciliation, bring more souls to fellowship. They also prosper in possessing their possessions and joyfully make financial investments which are used to grow the ministry. They disciple young believers and participate actively in Church Kingdom life of the congregation. This is an exciting truth! When remnant ministers practice the Teach, Train, Equip, Activate and Release paradigm of empowerment, the outcome will be this scripture in the lives of the brethren:

**2 Timothy 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. 2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

In this way, the Kingdom is expanded and enlarged exponentially!

13. Remnant ministers avoid the tendency to dabble into the divisive and hateful rhetoric that reveal insensitivity to feelings of others. They do not dabble into cultural wars, knowing that more harm can be done to the gospel through such popular actions as bashing particular sinful lifestyles. They preach about the dangers of sin and life of living outside the will of Elohim expressed in the word. They do not play the racist card and are even handed when discussing the races.

14. For this reason, they can overcome the snares of Satan, the world, Flesh. Dead to self, they are alive to Yeshua. This accounts for their fruitfulness in Kingdom ministry

**John 12:24 (KJV)** *24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.*

15. Remnant ministers never come to the point of relaxing, thinking they have 'arrived'. Rather, they continue to grow, like Paul the apostle and never stopping until they become all that our Head and King ordained them to be.

**Philippians 3:7-15 (KJV)** *7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. 8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, 9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith: 10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death; 11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. 12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. 13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. 15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.*

The reality is that ministers who stop growing, start to die! And they take many down the path of death!

16. All the above are real because true remnant ministers respond to the call of Yeshua to die to self; be enthroned in their hearts and give Him right of way to process and release them to go and do exploits by the power of Holy Spirit. They are just vessels in His hands with no independent agendas. Their attitude is that of availability for their vessels to be used by Holy Spirit!

**Matthew 16:24-26 (KJV)** *24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. 26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?*

**Galatians 2:20 (KJV)** *20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*

17. All these things shared are what make remnant ministers men and women of integrity, whose character reflects their Head. They do not play games with Elohim, neither do they play with other ministers and brethren. They are honorable in managing assets of ministry committed to their trust, not treating ministry resources as personal. They escape the snare of immorality which runs rife in the Body of Yeshua worldwide. They are also not part of the disorder which ravages the church as ministers break congregations and ministries at will to establish their fancy ambitions which they call 'visions' of the Lord.

18. They do not just engage in ministry; their sights are set on the things of eternity and the rewards of their King

**1 Corinthians 9:27 (KJV)** *27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.*

**2 Timothy 4:6-8 (KJV)** *6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. 7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: 8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.*

## Conclusion

The Lord has given us these benchmarks to enable us to assess where we are as individuals in our walk with Him. There are obviously other benchmarks not accommodated in this lesson. This framework should challenge us to understand ourselves better; know what to take on board and be increased in it. It also equips us to posture to receive more Grace and wisdom which Elohim gives liberally! It is all by His Grace – but we must yearn and take steps of faith to reveal inclination of our hearts!

## Review Questions

1. Which of these 18 features of Remnant ministers the Lord has given you the grace to manifest clearly
2. Which of the 12 are you yearning for His Grace to manifest
3. How useful did you find this lesson?

## Chapter 72

### Manifesting the Kingdom Church: Key Purpose of Remnant

It has been said at various times during this study that Yeshua, Jesus did not come down from heaven to found Christian Religion. It was Rome that founded Christian Religion when it married off the larger wing of the Church which had got tired of the acute persecutions suffered while waiting for the return of Yeshua. Starting with Emperor Constantine's 'embrace of Christianity' at the battle of Milvian Bridge and the edict of Toleration he signed with Licinius in 311 AD, the deal was sealed by Emperor Theodosius in 381 when the union of Church and State became a legal and spiritual reality. The narrative of the gospel ever since has been organizational rather than organic as intended. That organizational narrative survived the Reformation flagged off by Martin Luther in 1517. With the benefit of hindsight and harsh judgment of history, it can be seen that but for pockets of smaller reform movements, the entire reformation simply produced the Protestant equivalent of institutionalized Christianity.

Chapter 26 of this Course 139: Completing the Unfinished Reformation is worth detailed study because it lays out what the Church is not and what it is in detail. We will build on that foundation to provide a framework through which Ministers and Ministries will have a Bible-based compass of how Yeshua, Jesus wants His One Kingdom Church of His One New Man in the earth realm to look like, function, and manifest His original purpose. The Church which was birthed at Pentecost was initially spontaneous. It was a brand new reality for the saints who had followed Yeshua for three and half years. During those years, Yeshua did not only teach and proclaim the Kingdom, He also demonstrated the operation of the Kingdom in the earth realm. Let us sketch what life was like for those who were in His company:

1. He preached the Kingdom and taught about the Kingdom.

**Matthew 4:17, 23 (KJV)** *17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.*

*23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.*

2. They were called out of the world system and responded in Faith to follow the Master. Encounter with Him often leads to a change of direction as well as lifestyle!

**Matthew 4:18-22 (KJV)** *18 And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers. 19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men. 20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him. 21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them. 22 And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.*

3. They came to be with Him in a real, intimate relationship to the extent He knew their names, visited homes of some, gave young and old, righteous and sinners access to Himself.

4. He demonstrated the Kingdom in several dimensions. It was not just about going to 'Church' as it were. It was about tapping into the realm of the Government of Elohim through which His sons can enjoy the full benefice of His powers. In that regard, various needs of people who followed or believed in Him were met. Let us review a few highlights:

**4.1 Health Care:** Whenever there was a health scare amongst the people, Yeshua healed them.

**Matthew 4:24 (KJV)** *24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.*

**Matthew 12:15 (KJV)** *15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all;*

**Matthew 14:14 (KJV)** *14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.*

**Matthew 15:30 (KJV)** *30 And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them:*

**Matthew 19:2 (KJV)** *2 And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.*

**Matthew 21:14 (KJV)** *14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them.*

**4.2 Education:** The ministry of Yeshua was essentially a Teaching camp to provide Kingdom citizens with a detailed understanding of the Kingdom. The Sermon on the Mount was a detailed expose of what Kingdom life on earth should be like (Matthew 5,6, 7). The Parables were vivid illustrations of it as well as indications of how the Kingdom should be esteemed far above other pursuits (Matthew 13). Even when He died and rose again, Yeshua found it necessary to provide the now believing disciples further insights into the Kingdom through a 40 day teaching camp (Acts 1:1-4). Through the educational arm of His Ministry, Yeshua confirmed the Word as the bedrock on which everything else stood and should, therefore, be highly esteemed:

**Matthew 7:24-27 (KJV)** *24 Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: 25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. 26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.*

The Kingdom Educational model equipped its citizens for life. It enabled them to know Elohim, know themselves; understand the Kingdom, their rights, and privileges and equipped them for life. By diligent study of the Constitution of the Kingdom under unction of Holy Spirit, saints are equipped with the compass of life which ensures success in this world and the world to come.

**4.3 Social Welfare:** Yeshua did not just preach, teach and do miracles. He ensured practical needs of those who believed on Him were met. This includes:

**Matthew 14:15-20 (KJV)** *15 And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals. 16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart; give ye them to eat. 17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes. 18 He said, Bring them hither to me. 19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. 20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.*

**4.4 Economics:** The gospel of the Kingdom cared about the economic wellbeing of its citizens and ambassadors. The world system ruled by Rome, like all other worldly kingdoms, operate on a paradigm which basically says there are shrinking resources chased by an exploding population. This supply/demand equation leads to competition, strife for the stronger to get more resources for themselves and their unborn generations at expense of the weak and poor. Yeshua came with an opposite Kingdom economic model in which Elohim Who created all things has more than enough resources to meet the needs of all His sons in the earth realm. In this model, the issue was no longer the physical strength of saints and their ability to run around. Economic welfare would rather be based on accepting the all sufficiency of Elohim and release of Faith in His Name for receiving all that is necessary for wellbeing! While Money is the Currency of the world economic system, Faith is the currency of the Kingdom with which and through which all the treasures of heaven are accessed and downloaded. When Faith is put to work, great results are produced!

**Mark 11:22-24 (KJV)** *22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. 23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. 24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.*

**4.5 Miracles, Signs, and Wonders:** Yeshua routinely demonstrated the powers of the Kingdom over those of Satan and nature through the mighty miracles, signs, and wonders He did. They clearly validated His claims to Divinity and were regarded as the 'Finger of Elohim' in manifestation.

**Matthew 4:23 (KJV)** *23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.*

**Luke 11:20 (KJV)** *20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.*

Before He existed from time to eternity, Yeshua gave those who would be His Body in the earth realm the extraordinary and startling capacity to do all that He did and even much more! This was based on the reality that they would be filled with the same Holy Spirit Who planted Him in the womb of Mary and empowered Him for the extraordinary ministry the day He was baptized by John in River Jordan (Matthew 3:16; Acts 10:38).

**Mark 16:17-18 (KJV)** *17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; 18 They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.*

**John 14:12 (KJV)** *12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.*

5. The Kingdom was about the transformed people who were subjects of the Kingdom. They were part of His Dominion and lived within His domain. The Kingdom was not, therefore, a dry abstract construct. It was about humans whose spirit-man had been changed from dominion of Satan to be subject to Him (Ephesians 2:1-4). Their translation to His Kingdom was based on acceptance of the offer of the New birth which came by repentance (John 3: 1-19). The new birth (Salvation by Grace) was but entrance to the Kingdom and opened the door to deeper realms of spiritual experiences. It was designed to lead saints to see the necessity to die to self and allow Yeshua to reign as Sovereign in their hearts (Matthew 16:24-26).

In this way, they enjoy the present dimension of the Kingdom along with all other saints of like faith. Since they are all part of His dominion, Yeshua made it clear the best of the Kingdom is expressed when those who collectively constitute His Body loved one another and lived in unity.

**John 13:34-35 (KJV)** *34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

**John 17:20-23 (KJV)** *20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; 21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.*

For Yeshua therefore, His Church is to be a case of 'Better Together'.

His desire was to birth in the earth realm, His Church as an agency of the Kingdom. What Churchianity and Christian Religion has done is to obscure the Kingdom so people 'come to church' to see an anointed preacher or participate in some sets of rituals that appeal to the senses but lack in true power of Holy Spirit. Because of this, multitudes are not able to enjoy true conversion and, change of their spiritual natures, though they are 'active' in Church. Even if they are born again, without submitting to the Sovereign rule of Yeshua, Christians will not be able to function as effective Ambassadors of the Kingdom.

## The Alpha Church and the Kingdom Message

The Alpha Church was birthed on the Day of Pentecost in the Upper Room when 120 disciples – from the well-known apostles to the obscure youths; male and female assembled in the Upper Room as He instructed them. Waiting on the Lord in Prayer, they were endued with Holy Spirit on the appointed day.

**Acts 1:4-8, 11-14 (KJV)** *4 And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard of me. 5 For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. 6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? 7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own*

*power. 8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*

*11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven. 12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey. 13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James. 14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.*

**Acts 2:1-4 (KJV)** *1 And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. 2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. 3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. 4 And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.*

Beyond the initial 120, other people who embraced the good news found acceptance in the company of the redeemed. Collectively, they became the Kingdom community distinct from the Roman-Jewish world around them.

**Acts 2:37-41 (KJV)** *37 Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? 38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. 39 For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call. 40 And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation. 41 Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.*

By preaching in power, sinners heard the gospel, were convicted, repented and came into fellowship with the others already in faith. Those who were saved knew and saw themselves as members of one organic community which was an expression of the Kingdom! Mindful of what Yeshua taught and modeled for them, the Alpha Church lived in a particular way – within the ambiance of the Kingdom which marked them out from the world around them. The content of their fellowship is telling:

**Acts 2:42-47 (KJV)** *42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. 43 And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles. 44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common; 45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need. 46 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, 47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.*

**Acts 4:32-37 (KJV)** *32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common. 33 And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all. 34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, 35 And laid them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need. 36 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas,*

*(which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation,) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus, 37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles' feet.*

Holy Spirit used Paul the apostle to give further guidance concerning how brethren can pool resources to ensure none lacked and in so doing attract divine blessings:

**2 Corinthians 8:9-15 (KJV)** *9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich. 10 And herein I give my advice: for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be forward a year ago. 11 Now therefore perform the doing of it; that as there was a readiness to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which ye have. 12 For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not. 13 For I mean not that other men be eased, and ye burdened: 14 But by an equality, that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want: that there may be equality: 15 As it is written, He that had gathered much had nothing over; and he that had gathered little had no lack.*

**2 Corinthians 9:6-11 (KJV)** *6 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. 7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver. 8 And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work: 9 (As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever. 10 Now he that ministereth seed to the sower both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness;) 11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifulness, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.*

Sincere brethren who are truly part of Fellowship (not false brethren) need to have the safety net of the Kingdom Church they are part of avail for them when issues arise that challenge their ability to take care. When brethren go to Conferences and retreats, those who have good pay should generously set aside more than what can take care of their own needs so provision is made for those who are financially challenged. When saints live this way, there will be no reproach on Yeshua and His Body. Rather, sinners want to draw near to inquire why we live the selfless way we do.

### Growth Necessitated Basic Structure

By Acts 6, the great growth of the Alpha Church necessitated emergence of a basic structure to be in place to carry the Kingdom Church. In doing this, the brethren did not go to the Roman Empire or the Religious system of Judaism to borrow a working model. They rather emulated Yeshua and the way He functioned with the 12 disciples. As Yeshua focused on spiritual formation through Preaching, Teaching and leadership, He gave the disciples the responsibility of receiving gifts from the faithful women who ministered to Him as well as others who sowed into His ministry. Many tend to forget that Judas Iscariot was official Treasurer of the Church that Yeshua pastored:

**John 12:4-6 (KJV)** *4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him, 5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor? 6 This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.*

In all the miracles of feeding the multitudes, Yeshua concentrated on making the provision while distribution was left to the disciples. They seated and numbered the people as ushers; distributed the

food and gathered the crumbs. In other words, while Yeshua functioned as the Chief Apostle; Chief Prophet; Chief Evangelist; Great Shepherd and Bishop of Souls (Pastor) and Chief Rabbi (Teacher), the 12 disciples were essentially His Deacons, serving as supportive ministers! When pressure came upon the early Church which could potentially take attention of the 12 Apostles from continuing the central work of spiritual formation and leadership, Holy Spirit reminded them of how Yeshua did it and they made adjustments:

**Acts 6:1-7 (KJV)** *1 And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations. 2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. 3 Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. 4 But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. 5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch: 6 Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them. 7 And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.*

It is a critical part of Kingdom Church that the Fivefold should concentrate on forming Yeshua in the saints and empower them for their identities and assignments leaving Deacons – the other category of leaders – with the skills, calling, availability and passion to take care of the business affairs of the Church. Wherever this distinction in serving roles is made, there will be true Church growth. It is important to note that qualifications of Deacons were not less than that of the Fivefold or carnal in any way.

**Acts 6:3 (KJV)** *3 Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business*

From the revelation granted to Paul about the governmental system of the Kingdom Church, the work of the Fivefold – Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors and Teachers – is so critical and strategic that they will definitely be distracted if issues like Money, materials and welfare of brethren were to shift their focus.

**Ephesians 4:11-16 (KJV)** *11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.*

The challenge of the end times is to see emergence of ministries and congregations which have sufficient room for both the Fivefold and those truly called as Deacons to function – as unto the Lord, serving the brethren with joy. In this way, the Kingdom is expressed in a holistic manner, manifested by

sons of Elohim who are whole – spirit, soul and body. Congregations are today behaving like Gatherings, not Fellowships.

A true Fellowship is where hearts are knitted together in love to the degree the need of someone is supplied by the abundance or loving sacrifice of others. The world is tired of seeing Church folks grappling with life issues on their own and weighed down or crushed thereby. They will believe when they see caring, sharing, bonding and strengthening among people of different tribes, races, gender, ages and locations who are fundamentally bonded by Holy Spirit to be the very Body of Yeshua in the earth realm. Congregations and ministries which follow this Blue Print are His Remnant in the earth realm!

Furthermore, the Omega Church must avoid one of the main draw backs of Protestantism: Unleashing of the spirit of self which makes people want to run off with any anointing or grace to establish ministries with limited gifting. There are those who are called to supportive ministry. When they discover and walk in their callings alongside visionaries, there is such a symmetry/alignment which unleashes the fullness of Divine power. Each local congregation and ministry are therefore able to manifest the Kingdom when there is greater scope for all gifts and callings to manifest!

#### Review Questions

1. Which aspect of this lesson impacted you the most?
2. What is your personal take away from this lesson in terms of how the Church should be basically structured to make Kingdom impact?

## Chapter 73

### Recovering the Axe Head of Obedience

In Chapter 72, the Lord reminded us of the blueprint He left for His Church in the earth realm to look like in order to manifest the Kingdom. One of the reasons why Christian Religion stumbled, just like Israel of Old is in the determination of those who claim to be His Own to live by principles and patterns which represent systemic dis-obedience!

#### **Obedience cannot be compromised!**

For the purpose of this lesson, let us be reminded that from the beginning of the human age, Elohim positioned obedience to His Word and submission to His perfect will as the acid test for those He created in His Own image and likeness! The reason is simple: Elohim created humankind after His Own form and likeness and blessed them with His authority and power to represent the Kingdom of heaven as Ambassadors and regents.

**Genesis 1:26-28 (KJV)** *26 And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. 27 So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. 28 And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.*

Right at the dawn of creation, Elohim balanced the awesome powers and privileges He conferred on humanity with a simple test or benchmark: Obedience.

**Genesis 2:16-17 (KJV)** *16 And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: 17 But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

It was in this context that we can understand the significance of why the fall of Adam and Eve in Genesis 3:1-7 was such a terrible thing which attracted the life described in Genesis 3:16-19. Lest we forget, this is what Elohim demanded of Adam and Eve. What this means is that human kind has the inherent capacity to further the purpose of Elohim or to negate it. His purpose is furthered when the created is in full alignment with the Creator. When humans obey Elohim in love and out of respect and honor, they keep the balance of the Kingdom in order! That is why Obedience to the Word is such a powerful expression of Faithfulness and Loyalty to Elohim.

This is also why disobedience to the Word negates every claim to spirituality! Disobedience to the Word of Elohim or worse still, twisting His word to suit human preferences is the clearest indication of unfaithfulness! Those who disobey court damnation by eternal separation from Him.

As we saw in Scripture, Adam and Eve failed this vital Test. When Elohim found in Abraham a worthy vessel to headline a new racial identity on earth – Hebrews/Israel, He placed before him the burden of obedience

**Genesis 17:1-2 (KJV)** *1 And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the Lord appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect. 2 And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.*

When Elohim gave Israel the Torah, the simple requirement for them to enjoy the full benefice of His Fatherhood was obedience.

**Exodus 19:3-8 (KJV)** *3 And Moses went up unto God, and the Lord called unto him out of the mountain, saying, Thus shalt thou say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel; 4 Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto myself. 5 Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine: 6 And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel. 7 And Moses came and called for the elders of the people, and laid before their faces all these words which the Lord commanded him. 8 And all the people answered together, and said, All that the Lord hath spoken we will do. And Moses returned the words of the people unto the Lord.*

Deuteronomy 28 reveals that all the blessings of Elohim were hinged on obedience. In the same way, disobedience produced the fruit of suffering, pain and separation from Elohim. When Yeshua came, one of the profound things He emphasized is that Obedience was going to be the acid test to prove how saints love Elohim

**John 15:10, 14 (KJV)** *10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.*

*14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you*

As has been extensively shared in previous lessons, Yeshua Himself modeled obedience by leaving no chance to disobedience! He accomplished this reality by making His Father's will His dwelling place. He accomplished this by simply surrendering His will to that of the Father:

**John 4:34 (KJV)** *34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.*

All false doctrine can be known by one simple benchmark: How do they lead saints to obey or disobey express provisions of the Holy Scriptures? Using this benchmark, we can now see the tragedy which befell the Church from the beginning of the marriage with Rome (between 311 to 381 AD) – a clear act of disobedience regarding spiritual harlotry till today when Christian Religion desires Government patronage. As Paul stated variously in his epistles, the Gospel places a demand of obedience on saints.

**Romans 6:16 (KJV)** *16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?*

**Romans 16:19 (KJV)** *19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.*

**Romans 16:26 (KJV)** *26 But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith:*

We do not need to go further than the Gospels, Epistles, and book of Revelation in order to see how the Church from the 4th Century till today has forsaken the Scriptures and rather followed the pathway of Israel regarding disobedience.

**Romans 10:1-4 (KJV)** *1 Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. 2 For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. 3 For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. 4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.*

**The challenge of the Final Reformation can be summed up in one word: Obedience.**

The Final Reformation is not about restoring one or some 'lost truths' or 'experiences' as was the case with various reformations/renewals. It is rather about whole hearted embrace of the Truth in the whole counsel of Elohim documented as the Holy Scriptures and living by same. It is about coming to the place of recognition that Elohim does not give us the luxury to:

- Cherry pick His Holy Word to determine which to obey and which to ignore or disobey
- Build 'churches' according to our cultural or personal fancies
- Make the Church our personal estates

Recovering the Lost Axe head

Those who claim to be Visionaries and leaders of the flock whose commission/mandate are from Yeshua must pause for a moment to ask themselves 'what am I building'? 'Which pattern am I following – Yeshua's or mine?' The strong words Holy Spirit released to the Kingdom Church through the pen of Paul the Apostle is worth consideration and forensic analysis:

**1 Corinthians 3:10 (KJV)** *10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.*

**Commentary:** Every minister must recognize that how we build the work of ministry is a window into state of our hearts: Are we obedient or disobedient? That is why we cannot afford to let a day go by before we pause to take heed how we are building!

*11 For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.*

**Commentary:** Yeshua alone is the sole Foundation of His Church. That foundation is already laid. To build 'personal' ministries on our personalities, worldly culture or things we fancy is to deny such works the benefit of the foundation that is Him alone.

*12 Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;*

**Commentary:** All those in ministry need to realize what we build with and how we build will fit into two broad categories of substances:

**Precious:** Gold, Silver, precious stones: These represent the right materials which can stand the test of time and fire.

**Base:** These represent patterns and substances of ministry which are combustible and alien to the King and His Kingdom. These include ABC Christianity/Churchianity where the focus is on growing attendance of people who are not in intimate relationship with Elohim but flock designated religious buildings on appointed days of the week to engage in rituals and bring tithes and offerings to enrich the 'Church' and leadership.

*13 Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.*

**Commentary:** Every pattern and act of ministry shall be tested and tried on the appointed day. Satan has deceived ministers' big time to think there are no consequences for what they do. This has hardened many to continue in religious exertions that are clearly unbiblical or even satanic.

*14 If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.*

**Commentary:** A day is coming when those who have labored faithfully, doing ministry with the right resources and substances to enter the joy of their Lord! That is the Day they will hear things like these sweet words:

**Matthew 25:23 (KJV)** *23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.*

*15 If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.*

**Commentary:** We see something that is critical here. It is the reality that Ministers who maintain their faith in Yeshua till the end shall be saved from personal damnation but their works will be consumed by the fire of His Glory! Many sincere ministers will discover the danger of being sincerely wrong rather too late. This scripture is for ministers who will be saved but lose all rewards because their works are found imperfect. Unfortunately, there is a worse category: Those who will end up in eternal perdition because they were not saved or they backslid or entered into apostasy!

**Matthew 7:13-23 (KJV)** *13 Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. 15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. 16 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. 22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.*

The gifts and callings of Elohim are without repentance as Romans 11:29 says. Applied to ministry, the implications are that though a minister can fall out of the faith, some gifts given to him or her can still

manifest. That is why saints are called to discern ministers by their fruits, not their gifts. Lifestyle will always count highly in the Kingdom! Those who will be used by Holy Spirit as part of the innumerable company of His elect remnant worldwide have their job cut out for them: The Divine Pattern of the Church is clearly articulated already in the Holy Word! All that is required is for us to accept the reality that it is the Divine Compass of Life through which our personal lives, ambassadorial assignments in the earth realm and the pattern of the Kingdom Church are already clearly articulated!

### Return to School Paradigm

As individual ministers, each reformer needs to be humble enough to confess our inadequacy and seek help of Holy Spirit to breathe upon the Word, the breath of Life. He is our Teacher, Guide and Empower!

**John 14:16 (KJV)** *16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;*

**John 14:26 (KJV)** *26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.*

**John 15:26 (KJV)** *26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:*

The rapture ready Church is one washed by the Word so the beauty of holiness can shine forth!

**Ephesians 5:25-27 (KJV)** *25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; 26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*

If this is so, we need to recognize that the Word is the Central thing we gather for! We gather to diligently study the Scriptures to understand and to prayerfully seek His Grace to be who He has ordained us to be. Our worship and Praises are good; our beautiful buildings are good; our various programs are good. But they all must proceed out of hearts, minds and wills which are totally in alignment with the will of Elohim in His Word.

**John 4:23-24 (KJV)** *23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. 24 God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.*

The status of Yeshua as Head of the Church and King of the Kingdom must be clearly established in our hearts so we do not miss it. The reality of the Church as His Body: A Living, Loving organism rather than a dry religious organization needs to be radically restored also.

### These Biblical Realities Need to Emerge in the Remnant Church

1. The Fivefold working together to bring the organic Body to pass. Visionaries need to humbly do spiritual audits to determine the fold they are and make room for other folds to emerge as co-laborers, not employees. The Fivefold are collective instruments of perfecting saints and empowering them for work of Ministry (Ephesians 4:11-16).

2. Deacons to be charged with management of assets and welfare needs of all (Acts 6:1-7). Visionaries need to be strongly invested in identifying by Holy Spirit, faithful saints and ministers who meet the qualifications in Acts 6:3 and empower them to step up the plate.

3. All saints to function as Royal Priesthood after Order of Melchizedek according to express purpose of the Lord manifested in the spiritual gifts given to them. For this to happen, saints need to be open to Holy Spirit to receive the spiritual gifts lifted with which to function as living parts of the same Body. They are listed mainly in Romans 12:1-8; 1 Corinthians 12; Ephesians 4:7, 11; 1 Peter 4: 10-11 (Please study the Books Holy Spirit and Spiritual Gifts and Discover and Fulfil your ministry in the website [kingdombooks.org](http://kingdombooks.org)). When saints are functionally alive, they can manifest the Kingdom right where they are! (Philippians 2:12-14; 1 Peter 2:9-12) Through spiritual gifts each member of the Body takes their appointed place. For this reason, the Lord does not want any saint to politick in the Church or seek undue advantage but to flow in service, using the gifts to edify and build up others.

4. But for effective service, all spiritual gifts and service to the Body need to be conducted in love 1 Corinthians 13.

5. The liberty saints have to exercise their spiritual gifts does not give any license to disorder. The Lord provides a remedy: The liberty to exercise spiritual gifts is balanced by the need to do so in an atmosphere of Order and submission to set authorities in the Church (1 Corinthians chapter 14; Romans 13:1-7; Hebrews 13:7, 17). Pentecostalism carried the negative baggage of Protestantism which is extreme individualism and disorder which dishonored Holy Spirit. That is why Pentecostalism failed as a denominational system. Holy Spirit is Spirit of Love and Order. When He is truly at work, there is a beautiful Kingdom Order which edifies and strengthens!

6. Beyond reformation of local congregations/assemblies, it is the desire of Elohim that no leader or part of His Body should function in isolation. The Lord has made provisions for framework of unity through two tracks:

- City Churches need to be nurtured to life through united actions and intense prayers by leaders of congregations in various cities. In the process, Holy Spirit will manifest Elders and Bishops gifted with collective responsibility to serve congregations, ministries and brethren city Churches (not rule them!)
- Ministerial networks which function as Kingdom Tribes will be birthed across the world. They will be safety nets of mutual accountability and support mechanism for ministers of the gospel. Just like Israel was made up of 12 Tribes, it is interesting that rather than pick just one disciple, Yeshua had 12. All ministerial networks are like Kingdom Tribes. Find one where you can fit in and faithfully engage with Elohim and fellow ministers.

International Ministers Fellowship has open doors for those who are tired of religion and want more! Visit [internationalministersfellowship.org](http://internationalministersfellowship.org) for more details. You do not pay to join, neither do you pay to be ordained and licensed!

## Review Questions

1. Please explain why Obedience is a critical proof of our love of Elohim
2. From this lesson, what aspect of the package of what the Kingdom Church should be like that you are yet to personally experience in operation?

## Chapter 74

### Faithfulness in the Ultimate Reformation of The Church

At this stage of our discourse in completing the Unfinished Reformation, it is necessary to connect Obedience to what should be its root: Faithfulness. This is because one can obey out of fear of punishment or out of a heart of love. Obedience can also be driven by hypocrisy (where one does not necessarily accept a need for change but does some external acts of obedience just to deceive others). On the other hand, one can obey Elohim out of a heart that is faithful. There are ministries that have, for instance, accepted the Fivefold in doctrine but not in practice. There are ministries which for instance ordain saints into ministry not as an act of empowerment so that they can function as the Royal Priesthood after the Order of Melchizedek but rather as a strategy to 'chain them'. Many Congregations and ministries have been known to plant 'churches', not necessarily to expand the Kingdom but rather to increase the membership roll of the denomination, increase revenue and expand the sphere of religious influence and prestige of the 'founder'. Wrong motives are functions of lack of Faithfulness.

#### **What does it mean to be Faithful?**

To be faithful is to be reliable, dependable and trustworthy. Faithfulness is a virtue which proceeds out of a sincere heart, free of humanistic agendas. People who are faithful are those who keep covenants with Elohim and fellow humans (Psalms 50:5).

#### **Elohim Models Faithfulness**

The Holy Scriptures present us with a clear picture of Elohim as a Faithful Being! Though He Is the All Sufficient One needing nothing external from Himself as motivation to do good, Elohim does good out of His nature.

**Deuteronomy 7:9 (KJV)** *9 Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations;*

Among many revelations committed to his trust, David saw and understood the faithfulness of Elohim and gushed about it in several of the Psalms:

**Psalm 36:5 (KJV)** *5 Thy mercy, O Lord, is in the heavens; and thy faithfulness reacheth unto the clouds.*

**Psalm 40:10 (KJV)** *10 I have not hid thy righteousness within my heart; I have declared thy faithfulness and thy salvation: I have not concealed thy lovingkindness and thy truth from the great congregation.*

**Psalm 89:1-2 (KJV)** *1 I will sing of the mercies of the Lord for ever: with my mouth will I make known thy faithfulness to all generations. 2. For I have said, Mercy shall be built up for ever: thy faithfulness shalt thou establish in the very heavens.*

**Psalm 89:5 (KJV)** *5 And the heavens shall praise thy wonders, O Lord: thy faithfulness also in the congregation of the saints.*

**Psalm 89:8 (KJV)** *8 O Lord God of hosts, who is a strong Lord like unto thee? or to thy faithfulness round about thee?*

One of the greatest tragedies to befall the Church is that Faithfulness is now a lost virtue amongst saints. The Church has operated on a deficit of faithfulness and obedience. As we saw yesterday, the obedience of a larger wing of the Church has not happened. The eyes of Elohim scan the earth realm looking for faithful humans! He Who is Omniscient and Omnipresent knows the hearts, minds, will, and attitude of those who claim to be His!

**2 Chronicles 16:9 (KJV)** *9 For the eyes of the Lord run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him. Herein thou hast done foolishly: therefore from henceforth thou shalt have wars.*

**Psalm 5:9 (KJV)** *9 For there is no faithfulness in their mouth; their inward part is very wickedness; their throat is an open sepulchre; they flatter with their tongue.*

**Psalm 12:1 (KJV)** *1 Help, Lord; for the godly man ceaseth; for the faithful fail from among the children of men.*

**Psalm 31:23 (KJV)** *23 O love the Lord, all ye his saints: for the Lord preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer.*

Faithfulness has two dimensions

- Towards Elohim – Obedience is proof of faithfulness to Elohim. What this means is acts of disobedience – including out rightly ignoring provisions in His Word or the deliberate twisting of scriptures to serve preconceived fleshly motives – simply represent Unfaithfulness!
- Towards humans – Faithfulness manifests as Trustworthiness and ability to be a reliable member of a spiritual team Holy Spirit puts together for a specific Kingdom Purpose. When unfaithfulness is present, there can be no transparency, sincerity and true communication. People who He brings together for Kingdom purpose can drift apart because they allow their self-interests and personal perspectives to blind their eyes to the reality that The Kingdom is about The King.

**The King has already set members in His Body, giving them specific assignments!**

In the Kingdom Church, the reality must be restored that it is not a worldly or carnal organization which we can run by our ideas, fancies or personal perspectives. The Church is positioned in the earth realm as the Ground and Pillar of Truth for which we ought to know how to live and operate therein.

**1 Timothy 3:15 (KJV)** *15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.*

If it is so, we need to begin to function with faithful mindsets which realize that as a spiritual reality, the Body of Yeshua was designed from heaven, in eternity past and we need to discover our specific places therein and faithfully occupy. That means we must be mindful to be the parts of the Body we were created to be, not the parts our ambitions drive us to aspire to!

**Ephesians 2:18-22 (KJV)** *18 For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. 19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; 21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: 22 In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.*

**1 Peter 2:5 (KJV)** *5 Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.*

When Faithfulness to Elohim rules the heart and mind, saints will beware of being driven by carnal ambitions to start religious organizations they essentially own and then have the temerity to present such idols to Elohim to bless. All who are born again ought to rest in Holy Spirit to manifest what parts of the Body they are. It is not by accident that the issue of spiritual gifts in the Church is referenced with the necessity of four preceding experiences:

- Death of the Self Life
- Renewal of the Mind
- Need to avoid Pride which leads to Gift Projection
- Recognition that we are a body designed to release and receive from each other.

Without these four preceding experiences, those who desire to use their spiritual gifts will be unfaithful to the Lord Who gave them and to the Church which should receive them!

**Romans 12:1-8 (KJV)** *1 beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. 2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. 3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith. 4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: 5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. 6 Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; 7 Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or he that teacheth, on teaching; 8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.*

A careful examination of 1 Corinthians chapter 12 and Ephesians 4:1-16 and 1 Peter 4:10-11 show the design of the Church is organic, rather than organizational with Yeshua Himself as sole Head, requiring faithful submission to His person and His pattern (Ephesians 5:22-33).

When this divine perspective is understood, it will have this profound effect on the Church:

1. Our concern as saints is to discover our spiritual gifts and function by them for building up the One Single, Indivisible Church of Yeshua of which we are all members.
2. There will be no one seeking to 'found' or 'own' an organization and call people to 'join' to become members of same. This organizational mindset which proceeds from the flesh is the basis of the extreme instability which is a key feature of Protestantism generally and Pentecostalism in particular. This tendency has done serious damage to the Body of Yeshua in the earth realm. Elohim looks to His elect

remnant to stop the fleshly driven desire to 'own an organization', 'be recognized and hailed' because it has prevented the manifestation of true Kingdom Communities across the earth realm through which sinners could easily encounter the reality of Yeshua as Lord of all.

Let it be re-stated differently: What Saints need is not ownership of organizations to validate their claims to be anointed! What they need is space within the Body to release the gifts and graces within their spirit-man in service of other saints both where planted as well as wherever they go! They too are open to receive from other gifts and graces which will add value to them for spiritual growth and holistic wellbeing.

Saints, this is the heart beat of Yeshua!

**John 17:21 (KJV)** *21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.*

### **How Unfaithfulness decimates the Body**

The deficit of Faithfulness has led to insecurities and instabilities that have prevented ministers from doing what they know is right – because they will be taken advantage of by crafty colleagues who come to ministries with agendas!

#### Victims of Unfaithfulness

Some of these features of the true Kingdom Church have not been implemented by many ministers who know the truth because those they labor with tend to misuse the privileges given to undermine visionaries and Pastors to break up fellowships and carry off as many as they can seduce. This has driven many leaders who know the truth to be wary of implementing these 3 critical features of the Kingdom Church:

#### **1. Fivefold**

There are many 'Prophets' who on getting accepted in local congregations fail to discipline themselves to function in order as part of the Fivefold who accept the visionary as Elohim ordained. With a bloated sense of self-importance, they set about to project their gifts, corner saints they deem as wealthy and essentially break up the Church. Once they are challenged, they get offended and leave – with those who have been systematically reduced to a status of co-dependents. The result today is many congregations have shut down the Prophetic permanently. In that extreme reaction, they quench Holy Spirit! Both the Prophet who acted in a fleshly manner and the Congregation which shut down Holy Spirit are out of order and engaged in Christian Religion. Both sides cannot bring any saints to perfection as a son of Elohim! Yet, the Church landscape is filled with 'churches' which fit into this scenario.

When flesh is alive and carnality runs rife, ministers with various callings find it difficult to work together for the long haul. Yet this ought not to be! It is still the intention of Elohim to bring together Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors and Teachers who labor together, under the leadership of Yeshua expressed through His appointed visionary!

Those who make this Divine Pattern impossible by breaking off to establish mono gift ministries they own are in self-deception of a dangerous sort. To deliberately work against the Supreme purpose of Head of the Church is akin to Seditious and the punishment can be severe! The truth is many of the multitudes of ministries on earth are built on Sand, not the Rock of the express words of Yeshua concerning His Church.

**Matthew 7:26-27 (KJV)** *26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.*

## **2. The Deaconate**

The reason why many leaders are leery of raising the Deaconate and empowering them to run 'business affairs' of the Church is the fear of unfaithfulness of saints. There are many cases where the spirit that operated in Judas Iscariot to steal from the treasury has been found in people entrusted with managing ministry funds. In some cases, those appointed to serve as Deacons go rogue: Holding the Pastors hostage with the non-release of needed funds. In some cases, those given access to manage ministry funds allow their stingy mindsets to withhold resources which should have been deployed to take care of the Pastors that rule well, serving diligently. The same Word which required them to serve freely also speaks of their being taken care of by the ministry.

Unfortunately, to work around the issue of unfaithfulness, many Pastors end up looking for people who are personally loyal to them or family members to manage finances. The issue in the deaconate is faithfulness to manage Kingdom resources at leading of Holy Spirit, in all honesty, for the best interests of the ministry.

In other cases, the issue is rather more complex: Saints get the wrong notion that what constitutes 'ministry' is what is done from the Pulpit, with the Microphone! The result is many who are called to start their ministerial careers as Deacons who will like Phillip be later transitioned to the Fivefold allow that false narrative to make them shrink back from the Deaconate they deem as 'unfit' for them. This leads to a strange situation where there just are no deacons to serve. In this case, some Fivefold leader step in as stop gap while waiting for the right vessels to emerge.

## **3. Gift based ministry/Priesthood after order of Melchizedek**

There are many Pastors and leaders who read 1 Peter 2:9-12 and even tell the saints they are the Royal Priesthood. Unfortunately, a Pastor can be so welded to the Pulpit or deem him or herself alone as an instrument of ministering the word that no space is created for Holy Spirit to manifest the saints in their gifting and membership-of-the-Body ministries.

It is necessary that all leaders put in place, as acts of faithfulness to the Lord and to saints, a Kingdom empowerment model based on the Teach>Train>Equip>Activate and Release paradigm. When Saints complete the cycle, they should be ordained to function, just as Yeshua ordained the 12 in Mark 4:13 and just as the Alpha Church did in Acts 13:1-4.

Saints should also realize that to be 'released' does not mean to 'run off' to do your own thing! It is rather an empowerment to function as an able minister of the New Testament. It is an empowerment primarily to effectively take your place in the organic Body that Holy Spirit is raising up as a Kingdom Community where as much of the Fivefold and all spiritual gifts are manifested in saints from different races; of different gender, ages, socioeconomic status who know each other by Holy Spirit. It is the synergy unleashed from such Kingdom communities who support each other in love and who invest in impacting their host communities which will draw sinners to come near, receive Yeshua into their hearts and take their places in the ever expanding presence of the Lord.

Where some need to be released for a fresh work

Surely there will be saints Elohim will call to extend the frontiers of the Kingdom from time to time. Where the call from Him requires a release to a fresh work, that should be handled with decency and in order. Nothing about the process should be done in strife or confusion if the motive is right. On their part, Leaders should not place impossible barriers before those who express the desire to be sent forth.

### **The Bottom Line: Faithfulness pays, in Time and in Eternity!**

Many are called but few are chosen. Among the chosen few, many will fall by the way side out of offenses, ambitions that are unfulfilled; desire to be known or make money out of ministry. The saints who will last the distance are those who cling to He Who Is Faithful and become like Him: Faithful to Elohim both in small matters as well as to big issues. They are also faithful to leaders the Father puts in their lives and faithful to serve the brethren the right type of spiritual food which nurtures them to wholeness and fullness!

**Luke 12:42 (KJV)** *42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?*

**Luke 16:10 (KJV)** *10 He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.*

**Luke 16:11 (KJV)** *11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?*

**Luke 16:12 (KJV)** *12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?*

**Luke 19:17 (KJV)** *17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.*

Of this sort will King Yeshua find those who will return with Him to vanquish armies of the world led by the anti-Christ at the Battle of Armageddon! They will rule and reign with Him for a thousand years as priests and kings in the earth realm and enjoy eternity with Him forever!

**Revelations 17:14 (KJV)** *14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.*

**Revelation 19:11-21 (KJV)** *11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. 12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and*

*on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. 13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. 14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. 15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. 16 And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, King Of Kings, And Lord Of Lords. 17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; 18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great. 19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. 20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. 21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.*

The Word of Elohim is the Compass of Kingdom. Those who He will use to complete the unfinished reformation are vessels of honor who will not add or subtract from the divine Word.

### Review Questions

1. Please discuss at least 3 main lessons you personally take away from this lesson
2. Why is it important that saints pay the price to work together as a team where the Fivefold is manifested along with many spiritual gifts?

## Chapter 75

### The Ultimate Purpose of Reformation: Concerns Time and Eternity

The reason why Elohim spared no word in the Holy Scriptures and the march of history to reveal the things we have received in this course is because of His high esteem for the Church of Yeshua. Of that high esteem, there are four things which we need to be reminded of so Complete Reformation of the Church can be empirically evaluated.

1. To complete the Mission of Yeshua which He began in His Incarnate State
2. To bring under subjection Satan and all powers of darkness so they do not hinder the divine program in the earth realm
3. Inherit the Manifest Kingdom
4. Inherit eternity – when the mystery of Elohim is accomplished and He becomes all in all.

Let us examine each of them in detail:

#### **#.1.** To complete the Mission of Yeshua, Jesus.

As we have seen in various sections of this study, Yeshua did not come to set up Christian Religion to compete for space and membership with other religions. That narrative of religion essentially reduces Him to the level of other human founders of religions and hides. It is what has fostered an emphasis on Church membership; emphasis on Buildings people go into on certain 'holy days' and the quantum of revenue derived from religious adherents.

#### **He came to:**

**#.1.1.** Cancel the disobedience of Adam by His Own Obedience. In so doing, Yeshua paid the price in full to reconcile lost humanity back to the Father (Romans 5:6-21).

**John 1:29 (KJV)** *29 The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.*

**Luke 19:10 (KJV)** *10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.*

**2 Corinthians 5:21 (KJV)** *21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*

Knowing these truths at a heart level will enable saints to preach the truth of the new birth with full assurance which Holy Spirit can utilize to convict sinners to embrace the Love of the Father revealed in Yeshua's Incarnation, Sufferings, Death, Burial, and Resurrection.

**Hebrews 10:9-18 (KJV)** *9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second. 10 By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. 11 And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take*

*away sins: 12 But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; 13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. 14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. 15 Whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before, 16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; 17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. 18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.*

**2 Corinthians 5:17 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.*

The New birth is indeed an exceptional manifestation of the Grace of Elohim which produces a special breed of humans in the earth realm who by Holy Spirit's work are in their spirit-man seated with Yeshua in heavenly places far above all principality and power.

**Ephesians 2:1-6 (KJV)** *1 And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; 2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. 4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:*

Saints who are redeemed in this way are members of the Body of Yeshua and citizens of the Kingdom. They are all part of one universal Body. To accept their division into denominational factions and deem them to be 'members' of fellow humans who happen to be ministers (a fact of Protestantism) is an affront to King Yeshua Himself. That is why it is evidently unacceptable for ministers to invite saints to come and encounter them and their 'anointing'! Holy Spirit does not lead saints into fellow humans but to Yeshua, the only Exalted One! As repeatedly stressed, it is the duty of all ministers to deliberately decrease by pointing saints to He Who Is their Head so they can know and grow up in Him!

To complete the Mission of Yeshua requires the Church to take the Go Ye principle very seriously. Whether as individuals or congregations, the foundational Kingdom business of reconciling the lost to our heavenly Father needs to take center stage again.

**Romans 1:16 (KJV)** *16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.*

**2 Corinthians 5:18-20 (KJV)** *18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. 20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.*

Of all the ways, we are to occupy until He returns, nothing matches the strategic assignment of reconciling the lost to their heavenly Father, discipling them, empowering them to live as sons of Elohim who are trained, equipped, activated, and released to function as priests after the order of Melchizedek.

Collectively, they take the church from the building to the Community to release virtue for transformation!

**#.1.2.** He also came to ensure the earth realm is re-populated with sons of Elohim

The completed sacrifice of Yeshua is a done deal which when received by Faith makes the New Creation the reality that it is!

**John 1:12 (KJV)** *12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*

When saints are well taught, they grow up spiritually to accept their identity in Yeshua

**Hebrews 2:9-15 (KJV)** *9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. 10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. 11 For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, 12 Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee. 13 And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold I and the children which God hath given me. 14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; 15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.*

The original purpose of Elohim for the earth realm was that it would be the portion of His sons, created to manage it on His behalf (Genesis 2:15; Psalm 115:16). The fall of Adam and Eve and their subsequent procreation of people of like fallen kind (Genesis 5:1-5) was not to last forever. However, it would take the sacrifice of the Ultimate Son as Seed of the Woman for the divine purpose to be realized. That is why the disciples could not be regarded as sons of Elohim and Yeshua's brethren until He went to the Cross and rose again the third day.

**John 20:17 (KJV)** *17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.*

By offering the world Christian Religion through the union of Rome and larger wing of the Church, the enemy effectively went for the jugular. That the Lutheran Reformation did not address this serious foundational error but continued with the leaven of Babylon effectively made it impossible for Protestantism to bring any believer to perfection. No wonder the Church in the past 500 years has seen the ugly face of Christian Religion just like in the days Rome had an exclusive religious mandate over Christendom.

We are the generation which will recapture the essence of Sonship! Sons do not seek to rule other saints. They rather incline their hearts to take responsibility for the Father's business. They serve with joy and gratitude!

**#.2.** To bring under subjection Satan and all powers of darkness so they do not hinder the divine program in the earth realm

Left alone, Satan would use his 3-fold mission of Stealing, Killing, and Destruction to waste the earth realm in diverse ways (John 10:10). This is more so since the Incarnation when Satan knew his time was almost up as ruler of the earth realm.

**Revelation 12:7-10, 12 (KJV)** *7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, 8 And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. 9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.*

*12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.*

The Church was ordained to beam the light of Yeshua so brightly that it dispels the gross darkness the enemy uses to blanket the world. In the same way, the reformed Church releases virtue for preserving its environment from corruption and destruction. By its prayers and Kingdom endeavors, the Church brings forth the redemptive gifts of its communities to create a flavor of good taste (Matthew 5:13-16). The Reformed Church is the agency which heaven uses to keep Satan in his place until the fullness of Time.

The promise of dominion over Satan is a sure one! Unfortunately, the Protestant reformation has not produced the lasting fruit of saints who know their Elohim to the degree they take words like this as their mandate to exercise dominion in the earth realm, despite Satan's antics. Saints who will embrace the ultimate reformation that Holy Spirit is affecting in the universal Body of Yeshua will walk in the realities of the enormous authority they have in Him!

**Mark 16:17-18 (KJV)** *17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; 18 They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.*

**Luke 10:19 (KJV)** *19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.*

**Romans 16:20 (KJV)** *20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.*

The capacity of saints for spiritual warfare was clearly stated in Ephesians 6:10-18 which we discussed in a previous lesson. Unfortunately, there are multitudes of ministers who have kept those they lead in ignorance of the powers granted them. Some others prefer to keep saints captive to their manipulations.

Today, several churches consist of believers who are constantly manipulated to part with more money; buy anointing oil; 'anointed prayer cloths' and all kinds of rituals to ward off evil spirits. Some go through endless deliverance sessions - for various fees! The truth is when the Church walks in the beauty of Holiness and is bound in unity by love, knowing its identity, powers of darkness take note and back off!

**Ephesians 3:10 (KJV)** *10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,*

Churchianity, the chief fruit of the Protestant movement today negates the emergence of a powerful Church which can deliver on these outcomes!

### **#.3.** True sons will inherit the Manifest Kingdom

Yeshua came to promise all who would believe on Him a part in His Kingdom to come. Contrary to the ignorance of Christian Religion, the Kingdom is an existential reality where those who make it will live in a conscious state, able to eat, drink, and function as priests and Kings.

**Matthew 25:34 (KJV)** *34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:*

**Matthew 26:29 (KJV)** *29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.*

Yeshua will return on a day no one knows and after subduing the kings of this world at the Battle of Armageddon in Revelation 19; after Satan and all evil are bound, He will reign for a thousand years according to Revelation 20:1-6. There will be no terrorism, no wars, crises, sicknesses, or any negativity during this period. It is a time when we shall see how the world would have been like if Adam and Eve did not sin and fall away. The plan of Elohim is that the first coming of Yeshua was to secure the legal right over the earth realm as a son of man (Psalm 115:16) which will be consummated when He comes to physically rule with all His saints who overcame.

For sons of Elohim who embraced all the processes He laid before them, the end of the age is not an occasion for anxiety, worry, or fear. They clutch at nothing as they seek first the Kingdom and its righteousness, even if Yahweh decorates them with the good of this world. For them, the end of the age is something to be desired, yearned for and looked forward to, just like Paul did.

**2 Timothy 4:6-8 (KJV)** *6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. 7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: 8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.*

Those who live with this mindset have no fear of death because of eternal life in them.

**Revelation 12:11 (KJV)** *11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.*

The Protestant Reformation and most renewals ever since have not placed sufficient emphasis on the end of our Faith. Understanding the glory and beauty of what lies ahead is enough motivation to press in and accomplish the Divine purpose while on this side of eternity.

Sons of Elohim will possess the Kingdom to come, ruling and reigning with Yeshua! The manifest Kingdom will not be left to other people! It is the portion of the faithful who will rule and reign with Him.

**Daniel 2:44 (KJV)** *44 And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.*

**Revelation 1:5-6 (KJV)** *5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, 6 And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.*

**Revelation 5:9-10 (KJV)** *9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; 10 And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.*

**Revelation 20:6 (KJV)** *6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.*

For this reason, true Kingdom leaders labor ceaselessly to ensure those committed to their trust make it into the Manifest Kingdom, just like Paul

**2 Corinthians 11:2 (KJV)** *2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.*

They know the utilitarian gospel of those who use sweet words to gather crowds of milk drinking babes around their persons, buildings, and organizations create a terrible anomaly of believers who obtain the goods of this world but miss eternity.

**1 Corinthians 15:19 (KJV)** *19 If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.*

From Salvation by Grace to Gospel of the Kingdom

Unfortunately, the Protestant Reformation of 1517 did not lead to the discovery of the dimension of the gospel of the Kingdom which had been lost for at least 1100 years when Rome went into unholy marriage with the Church. What Protestantism recovered was the gospel of Salvation by Grace which is a direct outcome of believing on Yeshua as Saviour. The final reformation will be used by Elohim to correct this anomaly. Therefore, Yeshua tied the global proclamation of the gospel of the Kingdom to His return.

**Matthew 24:14 (KJV)** *14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*

**#.4.** At the cessation of Time, sons of Elohim will inherit and enjoy endless eternity.

Before Yeshua left the earth realm, He made it clear that one of His future assignments was to prepare eternal abodes for His own:

**John 14:1-4 (KJV)** *1 Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. 2 In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. 3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. 4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.*

The mystery of Elohim will be accomplished one day

**Revelation 10:7 (KJV)** *7 But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.*

In the same way, the Kingdom will one day be consummated when Yeshua will complete the assignment thereof and hand over to Yahweh His Father

**1 Corinthians 15:24-25 (KJV)** *24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. 25 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.*

Many will wonder what lies ahead. The answer is an endless eternity of bliss with Elohim. We do not rely on fables and movies made by humans to gain the sneak peek into that world to come! It is for this reason the Holy Scriptures describe the type of saints who will live in the earth realm at end of the age as a fruit of the ultimate reformation.

The Holy Scriptures have enough light on what it is like:

**Revelation 22:1-7, 12-15, 20-21 (KJV)** *1 And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. 2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. 3 And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: 4 And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. 5 And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. 6 And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done. 7 Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book.*

*12 And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. 13 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. 14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. 15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.*

*20 He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. 21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.*

**Watchfulness and Readiness: The keys to the next phase**

The final reformation will see the manifestation of saints who take watchfulness and readiness seriously. They will neither be caught up with the spirit of the age nor will they be careless with their lives, sleeping when they should be awake! They will be Awake from sleep!

**Romans 13:11-14 (KJV)** *11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. 12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. 13 Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. 14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

Being awake is the key to redeeming time so nothing is lost!

**Ephesians 5:14-17 (KJV)** *14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. 15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, 16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. 17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.*

Watchful and engaged with Kingdom business

**Matthew 24:42-51 (KJV)** *42 Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. 43 But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. 44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. 45 Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? 46 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 47 Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. 48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; 49 And shall begin to smite his fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; 50 The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, 51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

The ultimate reformation will produce saints who are so Vigilant and Watchful, like the wise Virgins of Matthew 25:1-13 that they cannot afford the luxury of unnecessary/unhealthy soul ties with the Political, Economic, and Social systems of this world. Those who are yoked to the world system are in danger of being prepared to embrace the anti-Christ when he ultimately manifests as part of Mystery Babylon! Unfortunately, many prophets are leading the church astray – in this direction.

Focused, with eye on the prize which is their part in the manifest Kingdom and eternal joy

They will cooperate with Holy Spirit to be Rapture ready always – giving Satan no room to seduce them or for any sin to rule their lives. They recognize the rapture and resurrection of the dead in Yeshua – which are the point of entry into the manifest phase of the Kingdom – will be swift and sudden as 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 says.

**1 Corinthians 15:50-52 (KJV)** *50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. 51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.*

### Review Questions

1. Please share 3 main things which ministered to your heart in this lesson

## Chapter 76

### The Omega Church and Sin: A fresh emphasis

We need to continually remember, completing the unfinished reformation is about getting the Church to the place of radiant beauty and glory as it walks in the Holiness of its nature as the very Body of Yeshua, Jesus:

**Ephesians 5:25-27 (KJV)** *25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; 26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*

The True Kingdom Church is, therefore, a supernatural organism of sons of Elohim united together as lively stones! That is why they are a holy people living in love and in unity with Yeshua and one another. Those whose theologies and practices lead to a culture of iniquity or division of the Body for sake of building their personal religious empires are fighting Yeshua, The Holy One, Who is Head of the Church.

As an agency of the Kingdom in the earth realm, the Church is given a Constitution to guide its conduct. The constitution is the Holy Scripture now documented for ease of reference as the Holy Bible. It is the will of the Head of the Church this Constitution is diligently studied by all saints, under the unction of Holy Spirit so they guard against presumptuous sins which war against the soul.

**Psalms 119:9-11 (KJV)** *9 Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to thy word. 10 With my whole heart have I sought thee: O let me not wander from thy commandments. 11 Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee.*

A Proper understanding of the Word has the net effect of:

**1. Transforming hearts.** The same way saints become the new creation of Elohim by the Word (1 Peter 2: 23) is the same way their spirit-man is perfected by regular feeding on the word. Those who feed on the Word tend to have a lively conscience which does not give room for negative thoughts to become sinful words and actions.

**2. Renewing the mind.** The Word renews the mind and uproots strongholds of worldly culture so the holy culture of the Kingdom is planted in their place. This leads to having the mind of Yeshua (Romans 12:2; Ephesians 4:23; Philippians 2:5).

**3. Positive attitude to life including challenges thereof.** When the word is embedded in the spirit-man and mind of saints, they tend to see all things before them – including challenges and ‘difficulties’ through different lenses than others. They know like Paul all things will work together for their good because Elohim is with them always, never leaving or forsaking them (Romans 8:28-39; Hebrews 13:5-6).

**4. Make saints live Holy lives.** Lives that are well pleasing to the Father. With the hearts transformed, minds renewed, and attitudes stabilized, the saint discovers holiness is no longer a struggle to keep laws. Grace propels them to think, say, and do what is well pleasing to the Father out of a heart which loves, honors, and desires to be in perfect alignment with Him always (Philippians 1:6; Philippians 2:12-16).

#### **Key to holiness is Love of Elohim and fellow humans!**

When the Constitution of the Kingdom is properly understood as the guideline of life, saints do not need external motivation to live right. The seed of Elohim in them propels them to seek to please the Father always. This tendency to love Elohim with the whole heart propels saints to please Him also inclines the heart not to deliberately offend fellow humans – both the saved and unsaved – has the net effect of making righteousness and holiness a normal lifestyle of saints. When saints live this way, there is safety because no room will exist for them to sin against Elohim and fellow humans!

**Romans 13:8-10 (KJV)** *8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. 9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.*

One of the most unfortunate features of the Protestant community is the way Sin is now treated as normal and without consequences in time and eternity. Fueled by effects of hyper grace teachings and lingering effects of Calvinism, many saints live as if they have no responsibility of diligence in drawing down the Grace of Elohim which He uses to undergird them. The result is even with end of the age unfolding in high definition, many saints and ministers live in covert and overt sins, relying on twisted words of scripture to feel safe and secure. Therefore, the Lord propels us today, as we continue to come down the wire, to apprehend again the reality that the call to Salvation is a call out of the world that is under the rule of Satan to a new world where righteousness and holiness, flowing from Yeshua becomes the lifestyle of all who are part of His Body!

**1 Peter 1:15-16 (KJV)** *15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; 16 Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.*

Understanding of Sin and Consequences must be restored in the final reformation!

Saints need to be taught the clear truth: Sin is a choice of the human will to disobey provisions of His Constitution which regulate life in the earth realm. In other words, a life of habitual sinning is akin to sedition!

**1 John 3:4-10 (KJV)** *4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. 5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin. 6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. 7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. 8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. 9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he*

*is born of God. 10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.*

Saints need to be taught until they understand: Sin is toxic, deadly, and punishable in time and in eternity! Those who sin against Elohim have the opportunity while the gates of Grace are open to repent, be justified and continue in fellowship with Him and their brethren.

**1 John 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: 2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.*

Those who sin, persist therein, become hardened and die therein have made the conscious choice to go into perdition of eternal damnation.

**Hebrews 10:26-31 (KJV)** *26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, 27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. 28 He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: 29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? 30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.*

Speaking of Sin, the New Covenant was clear certain behavior and lifestyle the world deems as normal part of culture is not just unacceptable to Elohim but can lead to eternal damnation. Some of such sins are specifically mentioned that only those who are ordained to damnation can continue therein after being taught the truth. Let us look at these two passages mentioned in an earlier lesson:

**Galatians 5:13-21 (KJV)** *13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another. 14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. 16 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. 18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.*

*19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*

**1 Corinthians 6:9-12 (KJV)** *9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, 10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. 11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. 12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.*

Case Study of Specific Clauses Now Ignored

For those who cause disunity by gossips, backbiting or peddling of strange doctrines which entice some out of fellowship, the Word says:

**Romans 16:17 (KJV)** *17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.*

Paul was used by the Lord to state in clear terms to the Church immorality was not to be part of their holy Fellowship because it was a sin against Elohim, the body of the one who sinned and despised presence of Holy Spirit

**1 Corinthians 6:18-20 (KJV)** *18 Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. 19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? 20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.*

He went on to emphasize the need for purity in the Body in his epistle to the Thessalonians:

**1 Thessalonians 4:2-8 (KJV)** *2 For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. 3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: 4 That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; 5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God: 6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified. 7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness. 8 He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.*

### Role of spiritual authorities/Leaders in maintenance of a culture of holiness

One of the reasons Elohim allowed His Church to have the ministry of leaders placed in authority is to ensure standards of His Word are kept. For this reason, He gave them substantial authority to exercise discipline and keep His holy order (Romans 13:1-7; Hebrews 13:7,17).

Paul, the Apostle exercised this authority when dealing with the brother who committed incest with his father's wife. He ordered the brother to be handed over to Satan to torment his flesh so in anguish, he could cry to Elohim for mercy.

**1 Corinthians 5:1-5 (KJV)** *1 It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. 2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you. 3 For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed, 4 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, 5 To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.*

Though seemingly harsh, that level of punishment was the only thing which could save the sinning church goer who eventually repented and was restored.

The Church itself which had been polluted with immorality was purged by the act of discipline Paul had imposed:

**2 Corinthians 7:8-12 (KJV)** *8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle hath made you sorry, though it were but for a season. 9 Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing. 10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. 11 For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter. 12 Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.*

That is why those who are placed in authority owe it to the Lord and themselves to model true holy living, just like Paul did. Those who do not do so but allow their ambitions and flesh to determine their lifestyles risk losing it all on the last day!

**1 Corinthians 11:1 (KJV)** *1 Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.*

**Philippians 3:17-21 (KJV)** *17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample. 18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: 19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.) 20 For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: 21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.*

**1 Corinthians 9:24-27 (KJV)** *24 Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. 25 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. 26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: 27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.*

The time has come for those in ministry to realize with the privilege of leadership comes a matching responsibility to maintain holiness of life! To accept leadership and deny this responsibility is to court damnation on the last day.

### **Love and holiness**

Even in matters where saints have liberty to do what their conscience approves, the organic nature of the Church as Body of Yeshua imposes a counter demand that no one should deliberately use same to cause offense to those of weaker faith. If saints walk by this rule, the unity of the Body will be preserved in the bond of peace!

**1 Corinthians 8:8-13 (KJV)** *8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither, if we eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse. 9 But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak. 10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols; 11 And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died? 12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ. 13 Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.*

All saints are to desire eternity to the degree they choose wisely not to allow any Preacher of unrighteousness to cause them to lose their Crown. In the same way, saints are supposed to discern their environments to detect if Sin and Sinning are the ruling culture or Righteousness and Holiness define the environment. Since true Grace leads to righteousness and holiness, they will know whether the fellowship they are part of is heaven or hell bound! There is solid ground for saints to depart from a leadership or fellowship where sin is tolerated and excused!

**1 Timothy 4:16 (KJV)** *16 Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.*

**Hebrews 3:12-13 (KJV)** *12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God. 13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.*

**Revelation 2:11 (KJV)** *11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.*

Let us close the lesson with this Pastoral epistle of Paul to Timothy: Saints who sin in an overt sense need to be publicly reprimanded in love! To hide certain kinds of sin and do not reprimand the same may well mean handing the offender a passport to hell.

**1 Timothy 5:20-22, 24-25 (KJV)** *20 Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear. 21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality. 22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.*

*24 Some men's sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment; and some men they follow after. 25 Likewise also the good works of some are manifest beforehand; and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.*

The Father wants His end time saints to walk in Purity of Thought, Word, and Deed signifying alignment with His nature and lifestyle. This alignment is what makes saints His Omega Church, ready for the return of Yeshua, the Head, and Bridegroom!

### Review Questions

1. Please mention and briefly explain 5 specific things you received from this lesson.
2. In terms of pressing into a state of purity and holy living, what is your resolution going forward?

## Chapter 77

### Resolving the Identity Issue: The True Church is not 'Protestant'

If we understand the true Church, no truly redeemed of the Lord shall have cause to accept the label of Religion called 'Protestant' that both Satan and Roman Catholicism have sought to attach to it. The reason is the term 'Protestant' fosters the false narrative that Roman Catholicism is the 'Mother Church' from which some people branched off in 1517 due to the work of Martin Luther. In other words, Christians who persist in identifying themselves with that label are simply manifesting a tacit admission their roots are in Rome. This tendency has set many Pentecostal, Evangelical, and 'Independent' ministers and ministries up to embrace the errors of the Lutheran Church which has been in talks with The Roman Catholic Church for re-union based on shared values.

#### Danger when saints are not watchful

Our Head and King gave the Church an important charge that has been largely ignored: The necessity to combine prayer and watching.

**Matthew 26:41 (KJV)** *41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.*

**Mark 13:33 (KJV)** *33 Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.*

**Mark 14:38 (KJV)** *38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. The spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.*

**Luke 21:36 (KJV)** *36 Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.*

Interestingly, two of the leading apostles of all time Paul and Peter in different ways issued the same warning to the Church:

**Ephesians 6:18 (KJV)** *18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;*

**Colossians 4:2 (KJV)** *2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving;*

**1 Peter 4:7 (KJV)** *7 But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.*

These two spiritual disciplines when practiced diligently will enable saints to discern unfolding events and situate them within their proper biblical and prophetic context. This tendency will, in turn, enable saints to pray more effectively. No time in history is it necessary for the True Church, even the Elect Remnant to be proactively aware of the currents of unfolding prophecy than at this time.

#### Enter the Prince Charming

Many adults of this generation are aware of how Roman Catholicism seemed to be under threat of collapse due to seemingly self-inflicted mortal wounds: Sexual impropriety on a large scale by priests

who seemed especially drawn to young people. The pedophile crises almost shuttered Roman Catholic dioceses and parishes in many parts of the United States and Europe as victims of historical abuses won huge monetary awards from sympathetic Judges and jurors. Not a few Protestants seemed to savor the impending downfall of Rome which they blamed on its policy of forced celibacy.

Suddenly, a series of events led to a turning of the tide. Without warning, Pope Benedict XVI on February 11, 2013 announced his resignation, effective on 28th of that same month giving Princes of the Roman Catholic Church – the Cardinals a short window of time to elect a successor. To understand this issue in proper context, let us get a proper insight into the background of this very doctrinaire personality, the 8th German of all time to sit on top of the Church of Rome. Wikipedia notes:

“Ordained as a priest in 1951 in his native Bavaria, Ratzinger established himself as a highly regarded university theologian by the late 1950s and was appointed a full professor in 1958. After a long career as an academic and professor of theology at several German universities, he was appointed Archbishop of Munich and Freising and Cardinal by Pope Paul VI in 1977, an unusual promotion for someone with little pastoral experience. In 1981, he was appointed Prefect of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, one of the most important dicasteries of the Roman Curia. From 2002 until his election as Pope, he was also Dean of the College of Cardinals. Prior to becoming Pope, he was "a major figure on the Vatican stage for a quarter of a century"; he had an influence "second to none when it came to setting church priorities and directions" as one of John Paul II's closest confidants.

He taught the importance of both the Catholic Church and an understanding of God's redemptive love. Pope Benedict also revived a number of traditions, including elevating the Tridentine Mass to a more prominent position. He strengthened the relationship between the Catholic Church and art, promoted the use of Latin, and reintroduced traditional papal garments, for which reason he was called "the pope of aesthetics". He has been described as "the main intellectual force in the Church" since the mid-1980s.

On 11 February 2013, Benedict announced his resignation in a speech in Latin before the cardinals, citing a "lack of strength of mind and body" due to his advanced age. His resignation became effective on 28 February 2013. He is the first pope to resign since Pope Gregory XII in 1415, and the first to do so on his own initiative since Pope Celestine V in 1294. As pope emeritus, Benedict retains the style of His Holiness, and the title of Pope, and continues to dress in the papal colour of white.”

It was nothing short of the supernatural this move came at a time Roman Catholicism had fallen on bad ways with a persistently negative press coverage of sexual scandals.

The Cardinals who constituted the Conclave had just 17 days to elect a successor. As they went into their world-famous conclave, the earth realm waited in bated breath for who would be elected as the new Bishop of Rome and Pope of Roman Catholic Church world-wide. For the first time in history, Rome did the unthinkable: They opted for a Pope, a man who was an active member of the Jesuits. Founded by Ignatius of Loyola in the Basque region of Spain, the Jesuits were set up as an effective ‘Delta Force’ of Roman Catholicism who would lay down their lives to counter the Reformation on all levels and ensure Roman Catholicism prevails as the face of Christianity under the Pope. It is believed, most of the

severest persecutions Protestants over the past hundreds of years faced were executed by Jesuits. Publicly however, the Jesuits seemed the perfect order of priests. Let us consider this entry in Wikipedia:

“he Society of Jesus (S.J. – from Latin: Societas Iesu) is a male religious congregation of the Catholic Church which originated in Spain. The members are called Jesuits. The society is engaged in evangelization and apostolic ministry in 112 nations on six continents. Jesuits work in education (founding schools, colleges, universities, and seminaries), intellectual research, and cultural pursuits. Jesuits also give retreats, minister in hospitals and parishes, sponsor direct social ministries, and promote ecumenical dialogue.

Ignatius of Loyola, a Basque nobleman from the Pyrenees area of northern Spain, founded the society after discerning his spiritual vocation while recovering from a wound sustained in the Battle of Pamplona. He composed the Spiritual Exercises to help others follow the teachings of Jesus Christ. In 1534, Ignatius and six other young men, including Francis Xavier and Peter Faber, gathered and professed vows of poverty, chastity, and later obedience, including a special vow of obedience to the Pope in matters of mission direction and assignment. Ignatius's plan of the order's organization was approved by Pope Paul III in 1540 by a bull containing the "Formula of the Institute".

Ignatius was a nobleman who had a military background, and the members of the society were supposed to accept orders anywhere in the world, where they might be required to live in extreme conditions. Accordingly, the opening lines of the founding document declared the society was founded for "whoever desires to serve as a soldier of God[a] to strive especially for the defence and propagation of the faith and for the progress of souls in Christian life and doctrine." Jesuits are thus sometimes referred to colloquially as "God's soldiers", "God's marines", or "the Company", which evolved from references to Ignatius' history as a soldier and the society's commitment to accepting orders anywhere and to endure any conditions. The society participated in the Counter-Reformation and, later, in the implementation of the Second Vatican Council.

The Society of Jesus is consecrated under the patronage of Madonna Della Strada, a title of the Blessed Virgin Mary, and it is led by a Superior General. The headquarters of the society, its General Curia, is in Rome. The historic curia of St. Ignatius is now part of the Collegio del Gesù attached to the Church of the Gesù, the Jesuit mother church.

In 2013, Jorge Mario Bergoglio became the first Jesuit Pope, taking the name Pope Francis

They did not elect Superior General of the Order but a Priest in Argentina – Jorge Mario Bergoglio - whose roots are in the Italy where his father was born. He promptly took the name Francis. He was enthroned as Pope on March 19, 2013. According to Wikipedia, “Some 132 states and international organizations sent delegations to the inauguration. The delegations included 6 sovereign rulers, 31 heads of state, 3 princes, and 11 heads of government.”

Those who thought Roman Catholicism was finished were mistaken! A highly charismatic man with proper understanding of gestures and public relations with a media savvy presence, in just 4 years he has revived fortunes of the Roman Catholic Church and effectively inserted it into world consciousness as the greatest Religious entity in the world with 1.2 billion adherents! Its main rival in terms of numbers

– Islam has a problem of the schism between Sunni and Shia versions of the faith. In Roman Catholicism, all orders are organized to achieve one end. Pope Francis has used his training as a Jesuit priest to restore respect for Roman Catholicism. The simplicity with which he carries himself, mingling with commoners, washing the feet of Muslims and Prisoners opting to live in a simple abode and many other gestures has shamed Protestant leaders, especially Pentecostal leaders with their extreme ostentation and flaunting of wealth.

Pope Francis did not waste time to launch a bid to re-unite Roman Catholics and Protestants. He called up his old friend from days in Argentina, Bishop Tony Palmer. Here is how Wikipedia presents its entry on the man who was to play a major role in re-union of Roman Catholicism and the ‘Protestant’ Movement before his unexpected death in July 2014:

“Anthony Joseph "Tony" Palmer (February 4, 1966 - July 20, 2014) was a British-born South African bishop with the Communion of Evangelical Episcopal Churches, a communion of dioceses and ministries that are inspired by the "middle way" of classical Anglicanism and count themselves as part of the Convergence Movement. They were originally inspired by Bishop Lesslie Newbigin, a British theologian, missiologist, missionary and author.

Palmer was born in the UK and moved to South Africa when he was 10 years old. He and his wife maintained a website, called the Ark Community, which is described as "an internet-based, Inter-denominational Christian Convergent Community, drawing our spirituality from the “Early Church” (33-600AD) Celtic Christian spirituality." On the Ark Community website, he was known as "Father Tony Palmer" instead of using the style The Right Reverend or the title "Bishop".

In January 2014, Palmer was sent by Pope Francis as a special envoy to a Charismatic Evangelical Leadership Conference hosted by Kenneth Copeland. During the conference, Palmer presented a short video message from the Pope. Palmer and Pope Francis were personal friends. The message was recorded when the two met a week prior to the Kenneth Copeland Ministries leaders' conference. Pope Francis suggested the recording and it was recorded on Palmer's iPhone. The message is one of brotherhood, unity and love. A declaration that the Reformation protest has ended. At the end of the presentation and video message, Copeland prayed for the Pope and recorded his own message back to the Pope.

Palmer died on 20 July 2014 after injuries sustained in a motorbike accident.

Tony Palmer continued the message of unity and released a video on February 28, 2014 titled – Bishop Tony Palmer & Pope Francis" on the Ark Community website with the apparent approval of Pope Francis. In this video, he said "The real gift of communion is finding our brother. For those of us who have ears to hear, let us hear, because this is both profound and revolutionary. Pope Francis is calling us into an authentic communion based on the fact that we are brothers and sisters in Christ, not communion through our common traditions. This is a new way forward."

It is important to get to know that over the past hundreds of years, the Roman Catholic Church had effectively nursed the hope that one day, what it considered its ‘Protesting’ children would return home.

That dream received a major impetus when it reached an agreement with the Lutheran Church. Here is how British Broadcasting Corporation described advances made in that direction.

“Catholics and Lutherans end centuries-old rift

Leading clerics from the Roman Catholic and Lutheran Churches are meeting in the German city of Augsburg for a ceremony of reconciliation ending theological disputes that triggered the Protestant Reformation almost five centuries ago.

The Churches are to sign a document tomorrow on one of their key doctrinal disputes -- the means to salvation. The signing coincides with the anniversary of Martin Luther's protest against the Papacy in 1517 -- the event that began the Reformation.

The Churches are keeping distinct positions but will emphasize their shared views as a means of promoting contacts and cooperation between some one billion Catholics and sixty million Lutherans worldwide. Luther's protest involved his nailing ninety-five dissenting theses to a church door opposing the Catholic doctrine that salvation could be bought through indulgences or earned through good works.

Luther held that salvation could only be gained through faith in Christ.

From the newsroom of the BBC World Service Saturday, October 30, 1999 Published at 15:54 GMT 16:54 UK

Leading Protestant ministers like Benny Hinn, Kenneth Copeland, Joel Osteen, James Robinson have all been in touch with Rome exploring ways to cooperate and have a united platform.

**Buyer Beware**

What the Lord has done through this course of study can be summed up thus:

1. Reveal with clarity the Roman Catholic Church was founded as a union between the Roman Empire and larger wing of the Church between 311 and 381 AD. Roman Catholicism, by its very nature and focus is in systemic rebellion from Yeshua and Truth. Its doctrines and practices are based on humanistic twisting of the Holy Scriptures to fit into a pre-determined agenda which is to deny as many humans as possible, the Salvation Elohim offers freely by His Grace to Sinners.
2. We also saw Elohim preserved His elect remnant from that union and ever since has kept those truly called by His Name away from the clutches of Religion
3. The Lord has shown us Yeshua did not come to found Christian Religion and in any case, the tenets of Roman Catholicism are based on repudiation of the Gospel of the Kingdom and its entry point, the gospel of Salvation by Grace. Roman Catholicism is based on two main pillars: Salvation by works marked by numerous rituals as well as elevation and potential deification of Mary as 'Mother of God'.
4. The true gospel and Roman Catholicism as a Religion are opposite each other and run on parallel lines which cannot meet.

5. Saints of the true Church are called to respect Roman Catholicism as a major religion in the world just as they recognize Judaism, Islam, Hinduism and other religions.

6. Saints must respect the right of people who prefer to follow the Roman Catholic Religion. There is no basis to quarrel with or insult such people. They are exercising their right to reject the gospel of the Kingdom in its entirety and Salvation by Grace.

7. Christians who call themselves 'Protestants' are in error of an identity crises. That is why some 'Protestant' churches and ministries have allowed some of the features of Rome – its identity to be found in them. This includes emphasis on Attendance, Buildings and Cash. It also includes all Nicolaitane tendencies in which ministers 'own' the flock and treat them like 'conquered' people. This also includes tendencies to the Levitical priesthood evidenced in continuation of Clergy-Laity divide; wearing of distinct robes; engagement in rituals of religion and several of the leaven of Roman Catholicism. Such ministers and ministries have no basis to refuse the invitation of Rome to 'come home'!

### **Our True Identity has no religion in it nor any leaven of Babylon!**

The point needs to be made repeatedly true saints of Elohim are not and cannot be 'Protestants'. Saints have a spiritual identity which shows them to be:

#### **#.1. The new creation of Elohim the day they received Yeshua, Jesus as Lord and Saviour.**

**2 Corinthians 5:17 (KJV)** *17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.*

The New birth is a spontaneous experience, not the fruit of any religious ritual.

**John 3:3-6 (KJV)** *3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.*

That is the day one accepted the Love of Elohim and one's name entered the Lamb's book of life

**John 3:16-18 (KJV)** *16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.*

#### **#.2. Sons of Elohim.**

We are simply sons of Elohim, not members of religious organizations.

**John 1:12 (KJV)** *12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*

That is what Yeshua came to do: Bring many sons to glory!

**Hebrews 2:10 (KJV)** *10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.*

1. Citizens and Ambassadors of His Kingdom mandated with authority of heaven – in the Person of the same Holy Spirit Who empowered Yeshua - to reconcile sinners back to the father and expand sphere of the Kingdom in the earth realm

**Acts 1:8 (KJV)** *8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*

2. The Body of Yeshua in the earth realm

3. The Bride of Yeshua He Is preparing for the Day of Days: The Marriage Supper

4. The habitation of Elohim by Holy Spirit – lively stones that make up the whole

5. A royal priesthood and one indivisible Kingdom nation called out of the world system

**1 Peter 2:9-12 (KJV)** *9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light; 10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. 11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul; 12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.*

For this reason, saints, the true Church, function as a living, loving organism in the earth realm. Because this organism is spiritual, all saints are individually connected to the Head, Yeshua and to each other. Labels of human religions cannot define the true Church.

It must be reiterated our Identity is in and with Yeshua alone, not religious organizations and entities:

**Colossians 1:12-23 (KJV)** *12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: 13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: 14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: 15 Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: 16 For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: 17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. 18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. 19 For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell; 20 And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven. 21 And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled 22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight: 23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;*

**Colossians 2:6-15 (KJV)** *6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him: 7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. 8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world,*

*and not after Christ. 9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. 10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13 And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; 15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.*

For this reason, saints need to stand on their guard, be watchful and prayerful concerning religions of all types including Roman Catholicism and their numerous rituals that weary the flesh:

**Colossians 2:8, 16-23 (KJV)** *8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.*

*16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: 17 Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ. 18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, 19 And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. 20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, 21 (Touch not; taste not; handle not; 22 Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? 23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body: not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.*

There is just no way the True Church can 'return' to Rome because it never was part of it. This Course has been used by the Lord to remind us of the Truth which liberates from the yoke of ignorance.

**John 8:32, 36 (KJV)** *32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

*36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.*

The onus is now on us to spend and be spent in the sacred Kingdom duty of making sure all people within our loops of influence are not ensnared by Mystery Babylon!

**Revelation 17:1-6 (KJV)** *1 And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: 2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. 3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. 4 And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: 5 And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth. 6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.*

As was shared during this study, Mystery Babylon is the outcome of the union of Church and state to create a pathway to 'spirituality' which is not centered on the Incarnation, Death, and Resurrection of Yeshua as the ONLY way to the Father. It is about humanistic attempts to 'worship God' that are outside

of His prescribed way. The result is sin and sinning becomes a prevalent lifestyle with no certainty of access to the world to come and eternity. It is not just about Roman Catholicism but also about all the Pentecostal, Evangelical, Charismatic, and Independent 'Church' groups and denominations which accept or foster variations from the simplicity of the gospel. In effect, Mystery Babylon has caused the gospel to be obfuscated, confused many and led many astray. The good thing is Yahweh has appointed to use those who know the truth to reach His remnant that are still within the belly of the system which looks so much like it is part of Yeshua, Jesus yet is essentially hostile to Him and His True Kingdom Church!

**2 Timothy 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. 2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

### Review Questions

1. Please share 3 things you learned from this lesson
2. What shall you do with this course On Completing the Unfinished Reformation?

## Chapter 78

### Responsibility for Revelation Deliverance and Distribution

Christian Religion which is the official face of Christendom is a deadly diversion from the gospel of the Kingdom because all the rituals associated with it lead to a form of godliness but has no power to transform lives since it is not based on the liberating truth of the true gospel centered on the efficacious sacrifice of Yeshua which redeems those who believe.

**2 Timothy 3:5 (KJV)** *5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.*

Christendom has foisted on humanity the same spirit which Yeshua denounced in Judaism. It is the tendency for heaping up tomes of religious instructions which have no foundation in the Holy Scriptures but proceed from the mind of human religious leaders and institutions and designed to control 'members' who are programmed to 'go to church' as flocking into particular religiously designed or decorated buildings where they are supposed to 'encounter God' for a few hours of plastic piety only to go back to their sinning ways for rest of the week until the next day of 'Church service'. For Yeshua, the act of deceiving people with a false religiosity was deserving of only one reward: Woe!

**Matthew 15:1-9 (KJV)** *1 Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, 2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. 3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? 4 For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. 5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; 6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. 7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, 8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. 9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

**Matthew 23:15, 23-28 (KJV)** *15 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.*

*23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. 24 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. 25 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. 26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.*

*27 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. 28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.*

The result is out of nearly 3 billion or more people who are supposed to be Christians, less than 20 percent are living a life of vibrant personal relationship with the Lord. What this means is those in a personal relationship with Elohim as a function of an experiential personal encounter with Yeshua is

probably less than 10 percent of the world population that exceeds 7-billion. If that 10 percent can be enabled to know the full truth which sets free and begin to function as the Royal Priesthood after the Order of Melchizedek, it is only a matter of time and the whole earth realm shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of Yeshua. In such a scenario, there will be greater potential for those appointed to Salvation to hear the Truth; be convicted to repent and embrace the awesome love of Elohim and His Grace.

Knowing the correlation of preaching of the whole Truth in the word to the end time harvest of souls, Satan has fought the Reformation movement since 1517 with the spirit of self-centeredness. Armed with the Elijah complex, many of the remnant are more comfortable with preservation of their own Salvation and founding their personal ministry platforms and religious brands than the overall heartbeat of Elohim which is to bring in as much of the remnant who are preserved by Grace into His family and Kingdom (Romans 11:1-6).

Truth makes the difference

As said in various parts of this course, Christendom is based on lies, traditions of humans and manipulations of truth to the degree many 'go to church' simply to practice Religion, engaging in endless rituals. For those who claim to be in Yeshua but do not walk in the light of the full counsel of Elohim, they are not able to live the quality of life which glorifies Elohim because the light they have in the Word is rather weak and grossly imperfect. When this is compounded with an absence of zeal to know the whole counsel of Elohim, we can now see why saints are falling short of the glory of Elohim.

**Hosea 4:6 (KJV)** *6 My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.*

The tendency of the post-Reformation Church to stay at the Mount of truths discovered by Martin Luther and other reformers of old has delayed manifestation of the Omega Church in brilliant beauty, ready for the return of the Lord. Therefore, the picture painted in Ephesians 5:25-27 seems to be unattained till now.

The reality is the Mind of Elohim is vast and limitless. But He has graciously codified the fundamentals of it for us in what is now the Holy Bible. When Holy Spirit is given right of way to illuminate the Word, Truth jumps off the pages of the Holy Bible that transmit Life and Light as well as wash the Church clean from all the spots of Sin, wrinkles of traditions of humans and other such things such as the spirit of systemic disunity which plague the Body. The Church is better off and prospers holistically when it walks in Love and Truth.

**3 John:1-4 (KJV)** *1 The elder unto the wellbeloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth. 2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth. 3 For I rejoiced greatly, when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth. 4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.*

Delivered to be an instrument of delivering others from lies, errors and half-truths!

**John 8:32, 36 (KJV)** *32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

*36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.*

Whenever Elohim delivers the remnant of any errors, misconceptions, and traditions, it is for enablement to become His appointed instruments for delivering their other brethren who are still bound in religiosity or errors and lies! Just as we were saved to be instruments of saving the lost, when we are illuminated with the Truth in our hearts and minds, the greater purpose of Elohim is to use us to reach our brothers and sisters with those same truths! The words Yeshua spoke to Peter are instructive:

**Luke 22:31-32 (KJV)** *31 And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: 32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.*

### **‘What shall this man do?’ Don’t compare!**

The Lord calls all who receive the Truth about the real church and who are called to locate and root out the leaven of Mystery Babylon to look beyond themselves. They are also to avoid the temptation of seeking to compare their assignments with that of other people. It is needful therefore to receive and run with the assignment of been instruments through which the whole Body of Yeshua can walk in the fullness of its appointed glory. If some receive the same truths and choose not to carry the burden of Yeshua for His Whole Body, no one should be swayed by the choices they made.

**John 21:19-22 (KJV)** *19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me. 20 Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? 21 Peter seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do? 22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me.*

Those who compare themselves with assignments of others are not wise as Paul told the Corinthian saints.

**2 Corinthians 10:12 (KJV)** *12 For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.*

At the end of the day, the state of our hearts will determine how much fruit the words sowed therein through this Course will bear.

**Matthew 13:18-23 (KJV)** *18 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. 19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. 20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; 21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. 22 He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. 23 But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.*

**Negative Responses need to be avoided**

Paul, the apostle exhorted the Galatian saints to avoid offense at him because of the Truth he shared with them.

**Galatians 4:16-20 (KJV)** *16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth? 17 They zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might affect them. 18 But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you. 19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, 20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you.*

May we urge all who truly receive the witness of Holy Spirit concerning the truths shared in this Course not to act selfishly and sit on the revelation while multitudes march down the broad way of religious exertions Mystery Babylon has spawned in the earth realm!

### Positive responses

For those who have witness of Holy Spirit these revelations are vital instruments of perfecting them and the whole Church which was purchased by the precious Blood of Yeshua, the most profitable course of action will be these:

1. Receive and internalize them as persuaded. The truth needs to be made flesh and allowed to abide in us. This internalized appropriation of truth empowers them to walk in full truth.
2. Out of their bellies should flow Rivers of Living Water as Holy Spirit quickens the internalized words and makes them a lifestyle. This affects their world view, making them radical, fiery instruments of Grace.
3. Intentional connection with others of like persuasion so collectively, we can use these same truths to empower the greatest number of sinners and victims of the lies of Christendom. Holy Spirit is raising an army of very empowered Ambassadors of the Kingdom who have a dual mandate:

Within their loops of Kingdom Influence in real life and on social media, they speak the Truth as a lifestyle for intentional discipling of those who are saved:

**2 Timothy 2:1-2 (KJV)** *1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. 2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

Collectively, we strategize as led by Holy Spirit and pool human and material resources to ensure the Gospel of the Kingdom is preached and taught all over the world for a witness – using all available means to create powerful synergy as our own collective contribution to preparing the earth realm for return of the King of Kings.

**Matthew 24:14 (KJV)** *14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*

**Acts 1:8 (KJV)** *8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*

In the first Reformation of 1517 and subsequent years, the Lord raised solo warriors who towered in stature and their 'Big' names became synonymous with what the Lord was doing (Lutheranism/Lutheran Church in Germany: Calvinism in Geneva) and several cities and such like. The final reformation will not be about solo acts of great names! It will be about a company of the remnant who are empowered with corporate Grace, each in His Own order, yet aligned to walk in unity with singleness of purpose: To prepare the Church for the return of the King of Kings and Lord of Lords! Because they act as a united corporate Body of mutually edifying Body parts, the only Superstar ultimately seen is King Yeshua, the Head. That way, Satan cannot resist their advance, neither can powers of darkness side track them! The collective grace they carry is powerful!

**Psalm 68:11 (KJV)** *11 The Lord gave the word: great was the company of those that published it.*

Saints, it is time both at the Local Assembly level as well as in networks for all of us to join hands in this fashion to be used by Holy Spirit to close out the final chapter of the human age. We all have various graces, spiritual gifts, skills, professional training which can be deployed to great effect when melded together and unleashed!

**Isaiah 65:8 (KJV)** *8 Thus saith the Lord, As the new wine is found in the cluster, and one saith, Destroy it not; for a blessing is in it: so will I do for my servants' sakes, that I may not destroy them all.*

Collectively, we face the future and eternity with confidence, knowing we played our part in doing all that is necessary to ensure the widest spectrum of those appointed to Salvation hears and know the Truth which sets free.

**2 Corinthians 5:10 (KJV)** *10 For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.*

Finally, please remember the truth Elohim unveiled to us about the Roman Catholic Church is not a license to speak down or hate on them. It is to arm us with the Truth which enables us to have a burden for them, pray and war in the spirit-realm and minister to them with love and compassion. Many are in the system not by choice but by birth. When the truth is shared with them in love, they are unable to refuse the Love of Elohim in Yeshua!

This and all lessons of the Course are free of Babylonian copyright restrictions and can be used in whole or part to impact the Body of Yeshua and Society.

### Review Questions

1. Please share 3 major revelations in this lesson which grip your heart.
2. Are there some special abilities or skills you have which can be brought to the table to make the final Reformation a reality?

## Chapter 79

### Feed Back from Mentors and Students

As we close out this ground-breaking Course for the 2017 Master Class, it is needful to gain a feedback of how it has impacted the Mentors and Students who will take it further to the wider Body of Yeshua. Two scriptures provide the biblical context of why it is necessary to ensure that those Elohim will use to equip the remnant have grasped the essence of the Course.

**Psalm 68:11** *The Lord gave the word: great was the company of those that published it.*

**2 Timothy 2:1-2** *Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. 2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

#### **Apostle Candace Star (Fort Pierce, FL), Director of Studies:**

Course 139 is vast and is filled with needful revelation of Elohim's truth [past, present and future] that shakes and crumbles every imaginary and simulated foundation that resembles that of King Yeshua (1 Corinthians 3:11). To frame one thought from Course 139, it would come from Lesson 67: Recovering the Lost Axe Head of Kingdom Life. My words would be directed to the local assembly. For in the earth, there are numerous assemblies in our communities – on boulevards, streets, avenues, courts, roads and drives.

It is vital to Church life (its power, authority and maturity) to live, serve and bind together in the authenticity of the gospel without any mixture or alteration of the Word. When this occurs in our local assemblies [the recovery of the lost axe head], our communities are impacted with Kingdom culture.

Diligence to the Word, effective communication, holy living, pure agape, faithful works, unity with Elohim and of the Brethren, having a lifestyle of prayer, serving one another, releasing the Kingdom from within, impacting society and being Eternity conscious will cause a great awakening in territories [domestic and foreign]. We become instruments of change within our communities, an effective tool to demonstrate Kingdom Life: Romans 12:1; 1 Corinthians 4:20; Romans 14:17.

To the LOCAL ASSEMBLIES, let Elohim arise and His enemies be scattered! Recover the Lost Axe Head.

**Minister Stephanie Foster (Chicago, IL), Registrar:** Saints level of effectiveness in teaching the gospel to all nations is directly correlated to their understanding of it inception and history. This course is a must, as it covers it all!

**Prophet Kandis Carney (Houston, TX), Principal Officer/Mentor:** Wake up and discern the times! This is a season unlike what the world has seen before. The Lord is giving His church specific instructions and taking lots of time to perfect us so that we can be ready for His return. The BEST things we can do right now are to posture ourselves in worship constantly, be consecrated unto Him and learn to hear His voice by spending time with Him and studying His Word. STEER CLEAR OF DISTRACTIONS! He is

thoroughly processing His saints so instead of pushing these lessons aside and being slack in application, we must be diligent to sow this Word into our hearts, meditate on it and pray it through. Stay in His vein and don't be surprised how He moves in these coming days. Take heed!"

**Apostle Brenda Jamison (Pennsylvania), Principal Officer/Mentor:**

Throughout this course and with the revelation released from the Father we can certify that the falsification of the Truth, which Yeshua, Jesus came to fulfill and bring us into the understanding and restoration of has been compromised, misrepresented and altered by the alliance of Satan, the Roman Catholic Church and the State. It is the alliance of the spirit of distortion working strongly to foster that which Yeshua, Jesus did not come to establish and that is "Religion".

Yeshua, Jesus came to restore that which Adam and Eve lost to Satan through his sly craftiness.

Deception is a mask that Satan used and continues to use to impede the movement forward to be reformed by the truth of Elohim's Word and the coming of His Kingdom on earth; however, the Father has caused deception through the vehicle of Religion to be identify that we would repent, reject, renounce and root out no longer walk after religion, the form of godliness nor it's deceptive rituals, dogmas or doctrinal ways that are to edify the flesh by works thereof. The Word let us know he who hungers and thirst after righteousness, they shall be filled (Matthew 5:6); as a result, we will not finish in Religion, but rather be delivered to complete the reformation movement by leading of Holy Spirit in our lives. Just as I recognized religion is not what Yeshua, Jesus called me to, but rather relationship with him. Also, I recognized religion is not restoration of my rightful position with the Father through and by Yeshua, Jesus but rather a position away from the Father. In closing, several years ago I spoke at a mega Baptist congregation and the message was "I thirst, will you?" In that message, the Father brought of three things and relationship was one of the three. This course has not only opened our eyes, but positions us to assist in the completion of the reformation bringing many into truth of Yeshua's Kingdom and His righteous that we may be a ready bride for the return of King Yeshua at the set time.

**Galatians 5:6-9 (KJV)** *6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love. 7 Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth? 8 This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you. 9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.*

**Philippians 2:17** *Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. 18 For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. 20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.*

**Apostle Denise Williams (Greensboro, NC), Mentor:**

Grace and Peace!!!! I can say that for me, from the very beginning with Lesson #1, The Introduction and Synopsis, even unto Lesson # 76, The Omega Church And Sin, it has been packed with wisdom and knowledge. The revelatory information contained in this course has the propensity to transform minds and reshape perspectives as it identifies, reveals, uproots, and helps provide a clean and clear canvas of the events critical to understanding not only what happened in the history of Christianity, but also world history as it relates to the issues, and its impact on Christianity both then and now. Our people are

destroyed for (because of) lack of knowledge. Enabled by right information and truth, we can earnestly go forward in our pursuit to complete the "Reformation Movement" that Martin Luther began, and be true vessels of restoration of the kingdom on Earth intended by Yahweh, as the Omega Church emerges.

As for what I have received from this course that I would share with the church, an individual, the corporate Body, a local assembly or networks that is going to be of the End Time Church: In my spirit I am first of all, pressed to share the truth about the erroneous foundations that we the church have operated from and continue to do so. I know that the intention of Satan was to disable the church and it may appear that he has done just that. However, the TRUTH is that he has not won, and he will not win! We are the people of Elohim, who are called by His name and once we have repented of our disobedience, wickedness, and error; once we have bowed down before our Holy King and sought Him in humility and sincerity, He will hear us and heal our land.

Secondly, I would share the awesome news that we are all important to Yahweh and that He has given unto all of us the ability to become His sons and to be a part of what He is doing in this end time season. There are no laity sects or groups that are considered less who have little or no power to accomplish our kingdom mandate; to "GO YE!" We are all "Priests after the Order of Melchizedek."

Also, I would emphatically share the significance and absolute necessity of the implementation of the Five Fold Leadership Model outlined in Ephesians 4, and how it is truly the way to the one mind, one spirit, and one body kingdom family as well as the Master Plan for the effective and perpetual kingdom strategy to Teach, Train, Equip, Activate, and Release. So that all of the brethren, all of the remnant family of Elohim will align, "12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13. Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ." (Ephesians 4:12-13)

Finally, my heart plea would be: People, seek the Lord while He can be found...time out for all of the excuses, foolishness, and issues that have caused us to sway.

"THE KING IS COMING!" Make sure that your lamps are full with oil!!"

I am strongly convicted to these aforementioned objectives, and I am dedicated to use every opportunity given me in my time remaining here on planet Earth, to share through teaching, preaching, engaging; by my speech, my walk, and my actions; as an Ambassador of Elohim and His kingdom... to the best of my ability with the help of Yeshua Ha Mashiach through Rauch Ha Chodesh, I will accomplish it.

**Minister Ann Watson (Maryland) Mentor:**

The thing that I received from this course is that as a remnant we have the responsibility to convey to the Omega Church, the Body of Christ, is that we have the responsibility to tell everyone we know that we have lost our way, to repent and turn back to the Father, and be ever so focus on Yeshua Jesus and the warning He gave in this course, to not compromise your faith for anything, or anyone. Don't let anyone or thing have so much power over you that you lose your crown. ABIDE, GET CLOSE, AND SAY

CONNECTED TO THE VINE. THIS WAS A WARNING. THE FULL INSTRUCTIONS ARE YET TO BE REVEALED.  
AMEN.

**Minister LaToshia Banks (Kilgore, TX), Mentor:**

Church - We are to be living stones proclaiming the Word of the Father.

Individuals- We are sent with a purpose and everyone has value. Jesus came and died for us so that we may have everlasting life.

Corporate Body- We are to be unified not fighting against one another because we all are to have the heart of the Father. No one is greater than the other and we are to be a living organism bringing souls into the Kingdom.

A local assembly or networks that is going to be of the End Time Church- the Father is coming back for a church without spot or wrinkle. Don't be tossed to and fro by every wind and doctrine. Also, we have the Word to measure our lives by and it is food to or spiritual man. Don't be malnourished, lacking nutrition of the Word!

**Minister Taylor McCarty (Kilgore, TX), Mentor:**

What I would share with those that are going to be of the end time Church is this: the key to Holiness is love of Elohim and fellow humans. That when we properly understand the constitution of the Kingdom as the guideline of life, we as saints do not need anything external to prompt us to live right. That having the seed of Elohim in us gives us the Grace we need to please the Father at all times. When we love Elohim with our whole heart we will not offend our fellow humans. Both saved and unsaved. In doing this Righteousness and Holiness will become a normal lifestyle of saints. Teach that sinning is a choice willfully made by humans to neglect the constitution of the Kingdom.

**Evangelist Janis Crew (Ohio), Student-Mentor:**

- 1) I believe the one thing to take away from this class is: The reformation is not finished until His Bride is perfect without spot or blemish.
- 2) Studying the mistakes in the reformation make it more plausible not to repeat the same mistakes and to understand HOW we got to the sad shape we are in as the body of Christ.
- 3) The Truths! Of the Alpha and Omega Church are fully clarified in this course. Thank you, Apostle George and Pastor Grace and all the supporting persons for this revelation and teaching!!

**Minister Brandon McCarty (Kilgore, Texas), Mentor:**

One thing that I would say to the church, an individual, the corporate Body, a local assembly or networks that is going to be of the End Time Church is that we must embrace the fact that our body is the mobile Holy Temple of Holy Spirit! We do not need to get caught up in worldly affairs! Our life is not our own, for we were bought with a price (the blood of Yeshua)! The Word tells us to "occupy til I come". We must remember that the only way we can do this effectively is to give up our will for the will of the Father and allow Holy Spirit to dwell in us. When Holy Spirit is housed in our temple, wherever we go

and whatever we do, Holy Spirit can have free course to do or say whatever is needed to bring deliverance and reconciliation to the lost!

**Minister Brittney Rene McCarty (Kilgore, TX), Mentor:**

I would charge the End Times Church to allow the Word of Elohim to process you, so when you minister to others there's no leaven of Babylon or the Levitical priesthood that taints the truth. The grace from Elohim that He allows us to operate in for His purpose is free. We just have to allow Elohim by Holy Spirit to come in and process us so we can truly be converted, consecrated, and committed to the call to commune with our Father. Embracing that understanding connects us to Him. This is when His will for our lives becomes our ultimate focus. Self has no choice but to get out of the way. We have to also live by the glorious truths because these help us to understand our identity in Yeshua. This course truly explained the reformation in the beginning, but also showed us how we need to reform our hearts to Elohim, our first love and shed the things that put a wedge between our relationships with Him.

**Prophet Rolanda Byrd (Fort Pierce, FL), Mentor:**

If I were to sum up the lessons with a few words it would be: Obedience, lovers of truth, and mortifying the flesh (with its ideals and comprehension of what/who the church is and how it is to be built) is essential basis for the Remnant to be catalyst for Reformation.

**Apostle Sharon Thomas (Pottstown, PA), Mentor:**

Many things have become apparent after partaking of this course. After 500 years the compromise and cold love mottling the church world at around 60 AD continues. There always has been a remnant and through intentional training, the emergence of the Omega church represents a remnant within a remnant. . . Those who live the truth and make disciples.

The reformation declared as Protestant gives a misleading and false label to the Bride of Christ, the true reformers indeed. Martin Luther's Reformation was the shock and awe of his day- rocking the false theology behind indulgences and purgatory.

Modern reformers must place the emphasis on renewal of the mind by the washing of the water of the word. The necessary challenge of excising the soul from the traumas of schisms, denominationalism, spirits of religion and competition must be boldly presented to new believers and those seasoned but have yet to prove salt and light.

It will take a unified body operating in love to prepare the saints to be blameless before Yeshua at the judgement seat. The main objective in the reformation is to prepare the saints to be blameless before Yeshua at the judgement seat. Lord open the spiritual eyes and ears of those who may feel they have attained acceptance into the kingdom by works. Many of these must actually come to the knowledge of truth. The reformation training we have received is a restored axe head. Help each to take all restraints of delay away, as time is short.

**Teacher Reginald Phillips (Kilgore, TX), Mentor:**

The thing that I would say is focus. Our assignments are critical to the effectiveness of the omega church's call. Also realize who we are and the function we provide to the lost and those that seek truth about Yahweh Elohim.

**Minister Karen Phillips (Kilgore, TX), Mentor:**

One thing that impacted me in this course is how urgent it is for the body of Yeshua to consistently seek the heart of the Father because of the times we live in. In seeking His heart, the body of Yeshua will have a greater burden for those who are lost all over the world.

**Minister La Tamera Fry (Kilgore, TX), Mentor:**

1) Lesson 66 & 67- The Father has put His value in us through Yeshua. As Sons and Kingdom Ambassadors we are to carry and add value wherever we are. Whether it be the Word, gifting, our walk, or Love, that place should be better through the grace of Yeshua that flows from us.

2) Lesson 10- The name of Yeshua, when spoken in pure faith, gives full access to Yahweh. Many, especially the church, has been desensitized to the name of Yeshua because of its use in vanity. I had to repent for the same, and understand the power that the name of Yeshua holds.

3) To speak plainly out of the things that I have received, that I would want others to know it would be: We as the end times church are more than just attendance, buildings, and cash. The Kingdom isn't about those things at all, but about being available for the Father to use to bring souls back to Him. Yeshua died so that undeserving people such as ourselves could live.

We are to pray and stand in the gap for each other and those who are yet lost. The gifts Yeshua has invested in us are not for our own glory, but for the glory of Elohim, Who uses them as He pleases. We are not to be dormant, but to use all Elohim has invested into us to stand and live in such a way that leads souls back unto Him. We are to follow the Word of Yahweh in its entirety and allow it to cut away pride, sin, and acts of the flesh from us so that we can live holy and consecrated lives unto Yahweh, with the full understanding that Yeshua is coming.

**Minister Dionne Maxwell (Indiana), Mentor:** What I take away from this course is a self-assessment, apply it to my life and release/share with others with urgency/911 emergency!

What I will say to individual saints who are to be the Omega and New Testament church have not discovered gifts/callings; if not being through the Teach; Train; Equip; Activate and Release process according to Acts 1:8, Matt. 28:18-20, Eph. 4:11-16 and the apostle's doctrine, they are living beneath their privileges and are spiritually malnourished. You need to talk to your leader about this ASAP, then tell me what the response was. If negative, I would be willing to teach them.

I would say to the rest the same thing: this is time for reformation of the church. It's time to come out of Babylonian, Nimrodic, and Nicolaitans lifestyles/tendencies. It is time to repent and return to Yeshua. To obey the Word of Elohim to be the church he called her to be: a living organism, not an organization. All believers have gifts/callings they should be functioning in, not just leaders!

**Minister Taria Dean (Pennsylvania), Mentor:**

This lesson is certainly a 'spiritual awakening' for the true Church of Yeshua Jesus who are called to represent Him in the earth realm. This course is a profound unfolding truth which liberates us from erroneous teaching concerning the Church and its foundation and affiliation with the roots of Roman Catholicism. This truth is revelation heart knowledge that Yeshua Jesus did not come to the earth to establish a "religious" system or entity (a temporal world kingdom), but He came to raise up (from spiritual death) a Living Organism (a spiritual eternal Kingdom) representing His Body as a royal priesthood as ordained by Elohim.

**Shelby Anderson-Johnson (Texas), Student:**

What I have receive from this course is a deeper understanding. It helped me to get out of my religious way I didn't even know I had. It's helping me with correction to live a life pleasing to Elohim. It humbles me and helps me to be the bride awaiting Elohim. Its meat also in a loving way.

**Riquito Adelino Pedro (Mozambique, Africa), Student:**

A coisa mais importante que recebi através deste curso é sobre o amor incondicional que o nosso Pai celestial tem para comigo.

The most important thing I've received through this course is about the love that our heavenly father has for me.

**Jaron Shepherd (Tyler, TX), Student:**

One thing I've learned in this courses about the end time church I would speak on is to get back to the pure word of God and his plan for his people! Throughout 2017 Masterclass it really puts in contrast how far the church has fallen away from the true purpose of God. It is important now to dig into Gods word and be steadfast because Satan is ramping it up and even the elect will be deceived in the end times. So, it is critical and highly important to stay focused on him!

**Kendra Shepherd (Tyler, TX), Student:**

I would say this has opened my eyes to the deeper meaning of what the Kingdom is and what we're called to do here in the Earth realm. It has revealed the truth by way of Holy Spirit and not man's theology. I'm grateful for all that it's exposing in these End Times and glad that the Father is pouring out His Grace upon His people. It's preparing us for the time we live in and the things we'll encounter. The Father has definitely not left us ignorant to Satan or his devices. I'm thankful for all that I'm learning.

**Minister Cookie James Bias (Kilgore, TX), Student:**

What I have received from this course so far is that it has really stretched me and it has made me realize even more just how important and serious ministry really is. I have also found it to be very knowledgeable, fulfilling and encouraging, it is also very challenging for me because of my work schedule but I'm still going forth and even though I'm behind I thank Elohim for His Grace!

**Mario Sandoval (Texas), Student:**

One thing I would take away from this course is the importance of diligently studying the word and putting 2 Timothy 2:15 into effect. There is so much to know about the word and things in history that had major impacts that I had no clue about, I was blinded without knowing! I thank the Lord for the 2017 Master Class especially concerning revelation of the Roman Catholic Church and all in general because it trained and equipped me for a much better understanding on what it means to truly seek the kingdom first! One thing I would say to the church today is to never get to a point where you have "made it", feeling comfortably trapped in denominationalism. Diligently seek the kingdom first to become priest after the order of Melchizedek to function and occupy properly until the return of Yeshua!

**Lesley Sanders (Orlando, FL), Student:**

We are the generation which will recapture the essence of Sonship. Sons of Elohim will possess the Kingdom to come, ruling and reigning with Yeshua!

**Glenn Wyrick (Texas), Student:**

Maturity, ground breaking truth, walking into humility, new heart desires and destiny.

**Andrea Gillis (Pennsylvania), Student:**

What I would say to an individual that I received from this course is convicting (of the heart), empowering (to walk in identity) preparing (for the end times) and transforming (renewed mind).

**Isela Guerrero (Texas), Student:**

As a new student to Masters Class, Holy Spirit has already been able to minister to me in various ways. But the main thing in which I have received from Masters Class so far is that it allows flesh to die and to gain full understanding of who you are in His will and to whom you belong. This course is like a blindfold being removed from ourselves and to view us, others, as vessels in the manifestation of His purpose.

**Brant Cooper (Texas), Student:**

Here are some of the things that I have received from Master Class: one that the original church was to be an organism, not an organization, ever growing by Holy Spirit empowering through the Word. Secondly, I now have begun to understand that forgiveness is so important. To be forgiven by Elohim and to forgive those who hurt me in the past. I recognize that those painful things, words, or actions allow me to have sympathy for others. It creates a willingness to help, to serve, and to love people and their circumstances that I've already been through. Knowing that I didn't do anything of myself, but Yeshua Jesus gave himself for me!

**Jessica Shepherd (Kilgore, TX), Student:**

Course 139 completing the unfinished reformation has been a course I have thoroughly enjoyed. One thing I would take away and would say to the body is to make sure that we as a remnant people make sure we are doing our due diligence to be of service to Elohim's people and to the lost in this last hour. Everything we have been learning is to make sure we are effective ministers functioning in Elohim's

organism with each other as brothers and sisters. As we are living in the last days we want to make sure we do our part in Elohim's holy reformation.

**Minister Jacqueline McCarty (Kilgore, TX), Student:**

The church in the end times will be one without spots and blemishes. The people of Yeshua will know their purpose in the earth realm; taking their rightful places as Saints of Elohim. The end time church will also be those who realize that he came so that we all will be reconciled back to him.

**Elijah Jawon Banks (Texas), Student:**

The one thing that I learned from this course that I would share with brethren, is that the church is not a dry programmed organization that gather up together to hear one man hoop and holler. Everyone who has accepted the call of Elohim have a valuable Kingdom assignment and are expected to be His hands and feet on earth in order to reach out to those who are lost. The only way to complete this assignment is through obedience to the Father which is fueled by love.

**Lisa Gray (Kilgore, TX), Student:**

The whole course of 139 was very powerful but the word that stands out to me is consecration. It is important for them that are living in the last days need to realize that the only place safe will be if they are consecrated and totally immersed as well as hidden in Elohim. And by doing that they will not fall for the anti-Christ.

**Minister Rebecca English (Columbia, SC), Student:**

The Master Class was God sent. I prayed a prayer and asked Yeshua for more spiritually than just "church as usual." I wanted to experience a different and a fresh move of God. When I started taking the Master's Class I knew Yeshua had answered my prayer. The Master's Class teaches biblical content where some pastors and leaders dare not to teach or tread. The Master's Class challenges me on a daily basis to reevaluate my spiritual relationship with Yeshua and my sisters and brothers in Him. The Master's Class holds me accountable to studying the Word of God, praying without ceasing and living a holy life on a daily basis. Finally, the Master's Class affords me the opportunity to meet other pastors and leaders with the same vision and passion for building the kingdom in the earth realm during these last days.

**Pastor Janda Shepherd (Kilgore, TX), Student:**

Whether by the written word of Elohim or by His spoken word, He never leaves us ignorant of the plan of the enemy for the end times church. Let us lend our ears and hearts to hear what Elohim is saying to the church. Let us walk in obedience and remain diligent to what He has already spoken. Let us all be willing vessels for the father's use as we continue to spread the "Good News".

**Dionne Chinyanga (Zimbabwe), Student:** these are some of my observations on Course 139:

- Enlightenment through fresh and uniquely delivered revelations.

- It is clear to me from the lessons studied so far that the saints must take seriously the study of the Holy Scriptures under unction of Holy Spirit. There is so much error and half-truths in the church that have been left unchallenged or un-corrected for centuries; perhaps because no one or not enough people have taken time to actually put the truth out there or because there is actually no one noticing the errors because of ignorance. In this season, I have most valued the truths I have received here that expose or point error, challenge and replace it with Biblical truth empowering and equipping saints to take a stand for truth and teach same as Father makes opportunities to do so wherever He has placed each saint.

- The lessons have set the Holy Scriptures as the standard for all truth and have proved beyond doubt the dependability and relevance of scriptures for all generations and these are they that point to Yahshua the ultimate Son and our Savior and spell out clearly what is to come and what is expected of the body of Yahshua we await His return.
- The truth serves to realign all saints to walk in divine purpose and will of Yahweh.

**Cleopatra Thindwa Kwenda (Zimbabwe), Student:** This is what I took away from the series of the Lessons I have learnt so far in Master Class:

(1) Elohim has so much for humans and the body of Christ and He does not want His people/ the body of Christ to walk in error. That is why He has raised people like Apostle George and Pastor Grace to help with His Reformation, Restoration and Revival. He wants things done right.

(2) I have also learnt the Kingdom of Elohim is not about titles, Buildings and Ministries with ambitious desires. It's all about souls, it's about people knowing their Creator, serving Him and walking in their purposes. No Minister should suppress the people they lead but rather empower them to discover their gifts and callings so that they walk into their destinies.

I have also learnt that as a Minister, Character is very crucial and also ignorance is not an excuse. As a Minister one need to have a right foundation, one need to get rid of religion and Babylonian practices, one needs to preach the Gospel of Truth without fear. One should be able to recognise error and correct it.

**Brenda Rossum Westmoreland (Kilgore, TX), Student:**

My main take away is the concept of Clinging: I feel clinging to Yeshua is very important to our walk. We are called to abide in Yeshua. Loving him trusting him allowing Our Lives to cling to him. In him we live outside of him we are nothing but with him we can do all things. When we go through things if we just hold on to him he will bring us through.

**Pastor Rodney Davis (Florida), Student:**

The Master Class studies have opened my spiritual eyes to understand Yeshua in a more intimate way. It has given me greater depth of understanding in the Word of God. The lessons have provided me a new outlook on who I am, who's I am and what is required of me in ministering the Word of God to the people of God. The studies have reaffirmed my love for Elohim and continues to give me a deeper desire to serve Him. The selfish ways and tendencies that I had are no more! Listening to Daybreak as a part of

the studies has provided truth, life and liberty in the Word of God in me. The Holy Spirit is leading and guiding me in all truth. The friendship and fellowship in the Word and with my new family has given me strength, love, and a sense of empowerment. The teachings have been given in love allowing me to come more knowledgeable about Elohim and Yeshua, Jesus, providing me strength giving me more faith in the Word of Elohim. I am even more equipped and more excited to be a part of the remnant willing to say and do the Will of Elohim!

**Pastor Gay Williams (Cocoa, FL), Student:**

The Master Class has been empowering, enlightening, understandable and life changing!!! Unlike any course work of study that I have undertaken this has been the most impactful! I could not have received this type of encounter with myself as related to where I was in God, what I thought I understood, where I need to be and how I accomplish the journey. I have never been exposed to the manner of teaching nor the quality and quantity of free materials, that helps enhance and further your knowledge in the Kingdom of Elohim.

The class requirement of being transparent, not for the sake of class, but for the sake of yourself, as a means to complete the course with success is mind-blowing! This requirement and the freedom that comes with being transparent as we discover through the lessons allows Holy Spirit to minister at the point of your needs, without guilt and shame which allows repentance for wrongs that are uncovered as you study ☐☐.

This journey has reaffirmed some of what I was doing, providing the why Holy Spirit was leading me to do it the way it was being done. Along with affirmation came redirection, rebuke and repentance. The Master Class provided the WORD along with explanation and application of the same. It has changed my heart and my mind!

The Master Class provides important historical information concerning all areas (spiritual, social, political and economic) that were impactful and had bearing on the Kingdom; what it was meant to be, what has been the stumbling blocks of the enemy to keep it from being realized to day in our lives and what the future holds for us as the Omega Church, remnant.

Finally, the Master Class experience is replete with jewels, nuggets and treasures that has helped me and would help others to grow up in Elohim obtaining maturity in Christ Jesus. It equips you to go out to reach others inside and outside of your sphere of influence, teaching the truth of the gospel, obtaining an intimacy with Elohim like never before.

### Review Questions

1. In 1 word, how would you describe these insights from Mentors and Students?

## Chapter 80

### Feedback from Mentors and Students Part 2

Further to the feedbacks we saw from some mentors and students of the 2017 Master Class on Course 139, we will close out the teaching and training by receiving the inputs of some more participants. Even as a 12- year old child, Yeshua engaged the learned men of Judaism with questions through which the depth of their understanding of Elohim was assessed:

**Luke 2:46** *And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.*

One of the ways Yeshua ensured that proper understanding and learning of Kingdom principles He taught truly took place was by asking questions which generated feedback. We recall the famous exchange at Caesarea Philippi:

**Matthew 16:13** *When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?*

By asking Principal Officers, Mentors and Students in the 2017 Master Class to share their thoughts on Course 139 and how it impacted them, we gain a number of important strides:

A feedback is provided which when analyzed will reveal if the mark was hit or missed in terms of transmission of truth

1. Gain insight into some important details which registered in the hearts of those who studied the course
2. We are enabled to gain better understanding of what Holy Spirit is doing so far in the hearts and minds of those in the class
3. We can track how Elohim is equipping the vessels He has ear marked for the final reformation.
4. We will be able to assess those who need extra help so that additional support can be marshalled towards them.

Let us now receive the final set of feedback from the Mentors and Students:

#### **Apostle Dr. Katherine Jones (San Diego, California) – Principal Officer/Mentor:**

Course 139 Completing the Unfinished Reformation is a valuable aid for all Saints for imparting to others historical truths relative to the history and plight of the church. The execution of the course takes you back through history providing the when, how, and why the church drifted away from Elohim's intended design. The course detailed discussion of the vessel Elohim used, Martin Luther, to spark a reformation to begin the restoration of the church back to what Elohim ordained it to be, was both enlightening and instructive. The truths taught when correctly understood help saints embrace their position as part of the remnant who are fully persuaded to take their position in completing the Reformation.

**Pastor Judith Butler “Joyful Judy” (Illinois, USA) – Mentor:**

What I have received from the lessons in Course 139 has been uplifting, refreshing, and rewarding. My view of Christian religion and church membership is not the same. It has been challenging stepping into the role of a mentor but it has been a blessing learning from the teaching as well as learning from the student. What I've learned from the lessons has opened opportunities to witness and share the love of Yeshua. As well a hunger and thirst for more godly wisdom and knowledge.

**Minister Tim Young (Texas, USA) – Mentor:**

Course 139 is an in-depth teaching that opens the eyes and heart of an individual, if they are willing to receive truth, to know history of Yeshua's church and walk in the order of Melchizedek. Crucifying flesh to hear from Holy Spirit and not rely on a man standing behind a pulpit to dictate our walk in Christ. Yeshua is the way, the truth, and the life. No man can get to the Father except through Him. Now we take these truths to whomever Yeshua sends us to or He leads to us. Thank You Ap. George for allowing Holy Spirit to reveal these truths through you and teaching us.

**Evangelist Ekwunife Augustina (Padova, Italy) – Mentor:**

Course 139 = what I can say on this topic...

To individual:

The new birth is manifested in responsible Sons of Elohim who by the power of the Holy Spirit working in their spirit-man, are there-in seated in heavenly places and are not afraid of principalities and powers of darkness. When Saints endure the process NOW, then they will rule and reign with Yeshua at his return. More reason all leaders should endeavor to ensure that those committed to their care/trust make it to the MANIFEST KINGDOM.

To corporate body:

God is raising an army, 'the remnants' in all parts of the earth realm. He is right now pouring out his Holy Spirit on many people- people are receiving fresh anointing/revelations. These are the ones that will mentor, support and produce more leaders. Their hearts are being transformed, minds renewed and attitudes stabilized. These saints struggle no more with sin. They live by grace! They THINK, SAY and DO what they see their Father, Elohim doing. -As Jesus said; '...I and my Father are one! '

To the local assembly.

'SONS' are not church goers rather members of Yeshua. They're in various congregations and in the market place too, they are there for empowerment, for building the Saints and are there also to ensure stewardship.

To do this, they need grace which is supplied to them by the Holy Spirit in their spirit-man. It shouldn't be a struggle rather we should flow in the anointing and also in the blessings that will follow. More reason to commit ourselves as a body of Christ in seeking first the kingdom and His righteousness!

**Deacon Eddie Gatson (Detroit, MI), Mentor:**

I have received that Truth sets people free from the bondage of ignorance and nothing matters more than to examine the nature and power of Foundation on which we stand as saints enabling us to discern truth vs error. What I would say to the Church, an individual, the corporate body, a local assembly or network that we that are saved are guaranteed liberty when our lives are built on truth. Furthermore, if we accept Salvation as being personal into Yeshua, Jesus and the hidden truths are revealed to us, we should not only Preach the gospel of Salvation by Grace, but also discover and embrace the Gospel of the Kingdom and wade our way out of the muck and mire of Christian Religion and Denominationalism. Again, Salvation is personal, into Yeshua, Jesus and His Kingdom, not organizational into a Religious group.

**Lakaedria Clayton (Texas, USA) – Student**

This course has been very powerful and has thought me many things I really didn't know. It has also opened my eyes and heart to know what a true relationship with Elohim is.

**Pastor Reyes Torres, Jr. (New York, USA) – Student:** Course 139 has been quite a journey. The classes have been enlightening and affirming in some cases. Yet at the same time they have challenged me in some other areas. I am grateful for the opportunity to have enrolled in the 2017 Master Class and look forward to the classes that are to come. Thank you all for your dedication and hard work.

**Leandra Gilbert (Texas, USA) – Student:**

Waters are bursting forth in the wilderness, streams are being made in the desert. It is time for the Body of Christ to strengthen the feeble hands and steady the knees that give way. Through Course 139 I see the Father purifying each individual heart on an intimate level, even as He is bringing us together as a whole in unity to fulfill His Divine will in this earth realm. The revelations concerning Martin Luther and the Protestant Reformation has done its role in giving us strategic insight to birth forth the movement of the Final Reformation which is to bring us back to the whole truth. For the Bride, there shall be no DNA of Rome lingering around.

Therefore, let us lay aside every weight and the sin which so easily besets us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us.

**Evangelist Rasheeda Armour (Maryland, USA) – Student:**

In describing a few aspects that I have received from Course 139, I would say that it has been revealed as a work truly in need of being completed. I see this course as an unfolding of the original plan of Yeshua to redeem His people from what He knew would eventually become hidden areas of bondage by leaders who served the god of their bellies. These leaders operate under vain deceit, cunning craftiness, and philosophies of men and strive on bamboozling the innocent, while rejecting Truth seekers from entering into Christ's Fullness.

What I would say to the Church is, Rev.2:7 – Receive the “ear to hear what The Spirit is saying”

The people don't belong to you! Teach, Train, Equip, Activate and Release them to be about the Father's business.

What I would say to the individuals is, Philippians 2:12 – “Wherefore, my Beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, WORK OUT YOUR OWN SALVATION WITH FEAR AND TREMBLING.”

What I would say to the corporate Body, a local assembly or networks that is going to be of the End Time Church is, Hebrew 12:14 “Pursue peace with all people, and holiness, without which no one will see the Lord! AND to take a conscious decision to (2 Timothy 2:1) lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us now run with patience the race that is set before us.”

In The Love of Christ Yeshua

**Cynthia Sibongile Mupotsa (Zimbabwe, Africa) – Student:**

1. Here are some of the things I received from course 139: Yeshua (Jesus) did not come to earth to found a religion, to compete for space and membership, otherwise he would have been no better than other founders of other religions. Instead Yeshua came to cancel the disobedience of Adam by His own obedience and by so doing He paid the price in full to reconcile lost humanity to the Father.
2. Our concern as saints is to discover our spiritual gifts and function by them for building one indivisible Church of Yeshua where we are all members.
3. Yeshua (Jesus) came to inaugurate the Royal Priesthood in the order of Melchizedek where all saints are called to be priests. By so doing, He phased out the old Aaronic /Levitical priesthood. However, we still find some saints still operating in these abolished priesthood; and you find the priests wearing the priestly robes performing rituals where the saints passively seat in the pews which is a very big error.

**Folayan “FJ” Morehead (Georgia, USA) – Student:**

The 2017 Master Class (particularly Course 139) has impacted my life in a wonderful way. I am now spending more time in the Word of God and exploring many foundational aspects that I once disregarded and brushed off as just “history.” I am grateful to have learned so much from a Kingdom perspective. I believe that since beginning Master Class that my relationship with Elohim has gotten deeper, more intimate, and overall better. I am learning to break away from the worldly and religious outlook of life and see it more now from a Kingdom point of view and mainly from the eyes of Yeshua. I am also stomping out all fears to do mission and ministry work as a result. To learn to preach and teach with boldness regardless of backlash is the way of an overcomer and Master Class thus far has helped me to reach that point. I know that there is still far to go and so much more to learn. I am excited to look back on my growth and advancement, but for now will spend time enjoying the ride and blessing my Lord for the new Kingdom family and connections!

**Pastor Norbert Ceejay Ekeogu (London, UK) – Student:**

One of things I found extremely profound about Course 139 of the Master Class is that the Lord used the course to resolve the identity crises that had plagued the Body of Yahshua over the years. Now the true child of Elohim can be clear about the fact that he/she is not a 'Protestant' as there is nothing he /she needs to protest about the Religion of Rome. Lack of this knowledge is a foundational error of the

Protestant Reformation which the Lord has used this awesome Course 139 to correct because Ps 11:3 says, 'If the foundation be destroyed what can the righteous do?' Now that the axe is laid at the root of the matter, the remnants can press in to be all the Father ordained them to be in the earth realm - sons of Elohim, heirs and ambassadors of the Kingdom and royal priests after the order of Melchizedek manifesting His power, purpose, presence, character and glory without traces of the leaven of Babylon! This is an awesome revelation and what every true child of Elohim needs at this critical moment. I thank Father Yahweh for this and am grateful for the Vessels of honour He used to this available to His Remnant Church.

**Uzoamaka Adiele, MD (Nigeria, West Africa) – Student:**

It's been an amazing course. Completing the unfinished reformation. I've been so enlightened about Babylon / Roman Catholicism and its attendant continued influence on the modern day church, the effects of ABC Christianity, Religion versus Relationship with Elohim and finally, the lesson that blew my mind.....the truth that Yeshua did not come to establish a religion, but restore a relationship gone awry. I can confidently say that Yeshua is not a Christian and to do so would be to box Him into a religious sect. Yeshua is God and cannot be confined to any religion, He came to establish His Kingdom and His citizens (who believe in Him and have ceded control of their lives to Him cut across every race and religious denomination. Thank you.

**Valerie Caraotta (Georgia, USA) – Student:**

This course had much to say about the present church, Elohim's original plan for the church, and how we as Saints and Ministers need to posture ourselves as the remnant.

I will focus my feedback on what impacted me the most which is responsible, holy living. I am thankful for this course because it did not blow by casually the importance of right living and sin. Many ministry circles today assume that sin is dealt with at the root which is the major misconception today. The fact is ministers and church leaders have dulled their sensitivity to the severity of sin and therefore are not walking in the fullness of Elohim's plan.

This course put a spotlight on my heart and Holy Spirit convicted me of things I long buried. By dealing with them I have felt more freedom and clarity along with have been more sensitized going forward to my heart issues. This is no small matter in the body of Christ!!! The enemy has us believing we are fine and looking at helping others while we carry baggage that needs to be dealt with. It touched my heart in some lessons where I realized that sin breaks the heart of God. "Be holy for I am holy" is not something to brush over. This is a clarion call to examine ourselves FIRST before we proceed in reaching out to others.

When the church grasps this in a revelatory way no demon in hell will stand against the power and anointing that will break yokes, destroy strongholds, and set the captives free regionally.

**Bassey Patrick (Nigeria, Africa) – Student:**

Course 139, I dare say, is the best thing that has ever happened to me in my quest to walk with, work for God and render services to humanity in the spirit of servanthood and in His own way. The total package

encapsulated in Course 139 is a tremendous tool of transformation and a treasure of translation from the Religiosity/Churchianity mindset and norms; into Yeshua, Jesus' Omega Church Paradigm. The contents have caused a complete revolution, revival, reformation, transformation, and unexplainable turnaround in my life and pursuit of doing the right things rightly!

My eyes have been opened to real gospel truth on a platter of gold with awesome inspiration that makes me spurred and soar into the next level of Elohim's assigned task as one of the catalyst in The End-Time agenda to herald the return of our Lord and Savior Yeshua/Jesus. Course 139 has practically released me into the realities of The Realm of The Remnants!

To The Church, the contents and context of Course 139 should form a veritable and valuable reference material for corrective pursuit in the efforts to get His Church aligned to His Will, Purpose and Picture – The Omega Church Structures

To an individual, it is factual that a man cannot give what he does not have. Also, one would never have unless it is given to him. On this note, no stone should be left unturned in broadcasting or advertising The Master Class Programme to whosoever cares to listen and reason. No individual, especially we that are privileged to experience this programme should take the task of communicating it to others lightly.

To The Corporate Body, the message of Yeshua/Jesus must be taken to the utmost parts of the earth. So, there should be neither boundaries nor barriers in our quest to get the right Word, the right way to wherever sinners are.

To The Local Assembly, it is said, to whom much is given, much is also expected! Yeshua/Jesus has given us enormous responsibility of working towards the fulfillment of His heart cry in John Chapter 17. The Church and her Leadership should take the responsibility of returning His Church to His structures and pattern. Nothing should be considered too much to dislodge all the monsters that have plagued The Church of Jesus Christ up to this moment - The spirit of Babylon, Nimrodic structures, the ABC manipulative methods and all other human interferences and anomalies! The Church Yeshua/Jesus died for should be returned to His Spirit to guide and lead.

To The Networks, the bond of unity, oneness, brotherhood, true togetherness, unalloyed love, communion and sincere fellowship should be consciously entrenched into all systems. These must be seen, practiced, felt and benefitted by all. Indeed, the middle wall of partition in Networks must be completely dislodged to make our Net-worth both fruitful, profitable and enviable by those outside the Common-Wealth of Yeshua/Jesus!

**Mazvida Umera (Zimbabwe, Africa) – Student:**

Wow! This course was a tool of empowering a weapon to wipe away every form of religion in my life and ministry. What I am teaching and sharing with the local assembly is that time for religion is over. Yeshua dwells in our hearts, and He wants to use us. Also, I have grasped this in my heart that we are to work for the Kingdom of God and to move away from churchianity and know that we belong to the Body of Christ and every part is necessary and important. Thank you.

**Olunfunke Aliu (London, UK) – Student:**

The impact of course 139- Completing the unfinished Reformation has indeed been great in my life. I have been taken through a course of history both secularly and biblically - so enlightening and emancipating!! Deep truths have been revealed to me which have changed my mindset on the gospel of our Lord Jesus, on Christian religion and on the great difference between both.

I have learned that I am a remnant and I have a role to play in completing the reformation started in 1517 by Martin Luther, furthered by a few more people but failed miserably to deliver the people from the stronghold of Mystery Babylon, Christian religion and denominationalism. It is now my duty together with the other remnants to whom I must connect where ever we find each other to urgently take this truth to individuals, the church of God and the world at large whenever the opportunity presents itself to deliver many people who are still stuck in the lies and half-truths and errors because the coming of our Lord Jesus is imminent!!

In addition, the course has done a lot of work on me, putting me in a state of preparedness not only for the work but also for the coming of Yeshua in His glory. Thank you, Jesus, for using Apostle George so mightily. It has been well worth it!! Praise God!!

**Pastor Kyazze Paul (Uganda, East Africa) – Student:**

Course 139 of Master Class 2017 has been very revealing, teaching and equipping in all the lessons. There is a need therefore to encourage friends and church leaders to enroll as it digs deep and enlightens where possible questions can arise.

## Completing the Unfinished Reformation

### Impact Assessment

Now that you have completed reading this eBook, we proceed to close out the lessons by undertaking a fuller assessment of its impact on our lives. The idea is to determine how far we can learn the main thesis which flowed through the book. When we undertake this assessment sincerely, we will be at a place where not by ritual but truly a proof that we have learnt enough from the Lord to entrust us with responsibility to teach others.

**Explaining the Gradings. For purpose of transparency, here is what each of the 7 Grades you are expected to use mean:**

- Excellent** means you received the full measure of understanding of what was taught
- Very Good** means you understood the main thesis quite well but short of excellent grade
- Good** means you had a more than average understanding of the Main thesis
- Average** is the lowest grade in the Pass category. It simply means what you gained was not much: The barest minimum
- Poor** is the first of the 'Fail grades'. You did not really understand the lessons as related to the main thesis. The best thing to do is to study the eBook all over again. Thereafter, you can do the Impact Assessment again
- Very poor** is the second level of the 'Fail grades'. You did not really understand the lessons as related to the main thesis. The best thing to do is to study the eBook all over again. Thereafter, you can do the Impact Assessment again
- Need help** is the category where you may have been stuck regarding some specific lessons or concepts. If you would like a Mentor to walk you through those areas you did not really understand after which you can do the Course Impact Assessment. Please contact us at [visionarymail7@gmail.com](mailto:visionarymail7@gmail.com)

**Expected Span of Time to complete the Course Impact Assessment.** On the average we estimate 45-60 minutes will be sufficient to complete the Assessment.

**Please answer these questions honestly with these grades in view:**

1. Overall, how would you rate this eBook in terms of understanding of the nature and pattern of the True Church which Yeshua established in the earth realm?

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good  Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

2. To what extent would you say this eBook has enabled you to distinguish between Gospel of the Kingdom and Christian Religion?

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good  Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

3. To what extent did this eBook enable you to understand the Alpha or early Church?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

4. To what extent did this eBook enable you to understand the main reasons why the larger wing of the Church was ready to embrace the 'Peace' and Marriage offered by the Roman Empire?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

5. To what extent did you understand the reality that union of State (Rome) and larger wing of the Church represented a divorce of Yeshua as Head of the Church and that fruit of that union was creation of Christian Religion?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

6. To what extent did you understand what Mystery Babylon means?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

7. To what extent did this eBook enable you to understand Martin Luther and his role in the Reformation?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

8. To what extent did this eBook enable you to understand the strategic role of the Ninety-Five Thesis in the Protestant Reformation?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

9. To what extent did this eBook help you to understand the other reformers in the 16th & 17th centuries?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

10. To what extent did this eBook help you to understand the shortcomings and baggage of the Protestant Reformation?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

11. To what extent did this eBook help you to understand that though successful in terms of breaking away from the grips of Rome, the Protestant Reformation could not bring the Church to the state of perfection intended?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

12. To what extent did you understand that Yeshua did not come to establish Christian Religion but to restore relationship of The Father with humans; restore the Kingdom lost by Adam and re-populate the earth realm with sons of Elohim

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good ( ) Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

13. To what extent did the eBook enable you to understand who the Elect Remnant of Elohim are and indicators that identify them?

**Answers:** ( ) Excellent ( ) Very Good ( ) Good (Average ( ) Poor ( ) Very Poor ( ) Need help

14. To what extent did this eBook enable you to understand how to recognize ministries and congregations which are have Kingdom operating systems and structures?

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good (Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

15. To what extent did you understand concepts like Priesthood after Order of Melchizedeck Versus Nimrodic and Levitical Priesthood patterns?

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good (Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

16. To what extent did this course enable you to understand the influence of Nicolaitanes on Roman Catholic Bishopric and priesthood systems

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good (Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

17. To what extent did this course help you to understand that the True Kingdom Church is not a 'Protestant' church

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good (Average  Poor  Very Poor  Not sure

18. To what extent did this eBook enable you to appreciate the ministry of the Word in perfecting the Church to be ready for ready for return of her Head and King?

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good (Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

19. To what extent did the eBook inspire you to lay down your life and all endowments in consecration to the Lord to be an instrument of reforming saints within your sphere of influence?

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good (Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

20. To what extent did the Lord use this eBook to challenge you to connect with other remnant with a burning zeal for completion of the Ultimate Reformation on a global scale and take your place therein.

**Answers:**  Excellent  Very Good  Good (Average  Poor  Very Poor  Need help

We wish you the best and a successful conclusion of Course 139: Completing the Unfinished Reformation

With agape,

Apostle George & Pastor Grace

## Postscript

This download from the Throne Room is made available, free of charge as the King instructed us for training those He will use to reform His Church and make her ready for His soon return. There is no Babylonian copyright restriction to limit your ability to use the material to study, pray it in and apply it in your life and ministry. This will enable you to build according to the Master Plan of the King, so you may be bold at His appearing! 1 Corinthians 3:10-15.

Please share this and all materials of the Global School of Ministry freely with friends, family and other saints. Please do not use them to print books! The right to do so has been granted to Kingdom agency.

### How to be involved

If you would like to be part of the elect who Elohim will use to impact and transform the Church worldwide with this revelation, there are various ways you can be involved, depending on your skills:

- i. Promote these revelations to the wider Body through Electronic or Print means or via Facebook and other Social Media
- ii. Be part of those who will use revelations in this course to train other leaders and saints within your loop of Kingdom influence;
- iii. You have the skills/capacity to edit or proofread these materials, Please send a note to: [visionarymail7@gmail.com](mailto:visionarymail7@gmail.com);
- iv. You can support in any other way: financially at [paypal.me/kingdombooksclub](https://paypal.me/kingdombooksclub)

## Masterclass Curriculum

The curriculum includes 41 courses and is divided into five modules consisting of basic and advanced courses. The basic courses are foundational Christian doctrines and beliefs, based entirely and completely on the bible as well as practical principles and practices concerning Ministry and how to fulfil same.

### **Module 1: Christian/Kingdom Foundation – 8 Courses**

Course 100: Constitution of the Kingdom – The Holy Scriptures as sure foundation of our Faith

Course 101: Understanding Elohim

Course 102: Understanding Yeshua Ha Mashiach, Jesus the Messiah

Course 103: Holy Spirit: Who He Is and What He does

Course 104: The 16 Fundamental Glorious Truths

Course 105: The 6 Fundamental C's (responses of the Truly Redeemed)

Course 106: The Ultimate Three: Faith, Hope and Charity

Course 107: Grace

### **Module 2: The Kingdom and the Church – 10 Courses**

Course 108: The Church

Course 109: Kingdom Oriented Church Growth

Course 110: The Church of His Vision

Course 111: The Kingdom of Elohim

Course 112: The Ascension Office – Gifts (Fivefold Leadership Gifts)

Course 113: Spiritual Gifts: What, Why, How

Course 114: Leadership in the Household of Faith

Course 115: Authority

Course 116: The Great Commission

Course 117: Ministerial Ethics

### **Module 3: Kingdom Citizen and Ambassador – 9 Courses**

Course 118: The Call, Cost, and Rewards of Discipleship

Course 119: Ministry: Discover, Pursue and Fulfilling

Course 120: Personal Spiritual Growth and Maturity

Course 121: Market Place Ministry

Course 122: Women in Ministry

Course 123: Rewards of the Faithful

Course 124: Christian Marriage & Family Life

Course 125: Finances and Stewardship in Elohim's House

Course 126: Introduction to Christian Counselling

### **Module 4: Dominion Mandate of the Redeemed – 4 Courses**

Course 127: Signs, Wonders, and the Miraculous  
Course 128: Understanding the Human Nature  
Course 129: Critical Adversaries  
Course 130: Prayer & Spiritual Warfare  
Course 131: Dispensations, Seasons and Times

**Module 5: Digging Deep – 9 Courses**

Course 132: Doctrines of the Bible  
Course 133: All that Yeshua, Jesus Said and Did  
Course 134: Apostasies, Heresies, Errors and the Pseudo-Gospel  
Course 135: Priesthood and the Kingdom Church  
Course 136: Divine Perspective of Purpose  
Course 137: 7 Letters from Heaven  
Course 138: Legacies of Yeshua  
Course 139: Completing the Unfinished Reformation  
Course 140: Strategic Kingdom Leadership

The curriculum is released free of charge to saints worldwide who are willing to utilise the courses to empower other saints by training them to function as the Royal Priesthood after the Order of Melchizedek. In some parts of the world, Bible Schools have requested and received the curriculum which they use for training. A great company of saints have been trained and ordained through the process worldwide and serve as mentors to saints participating in the Master Class.

## Masterclass Mentors

Apostle Kolade Akin – London, United Kingdom  
Minister Anthony Aigbiko - Italy  
Minister Fombah Archie – Valdarno, Italy  
Minister Mary Armstead – Columbia, South Carolina  
Minister LaToshia Banks – Kilgore, Texas  
Apostle Hilda Esewe Bastel – Braintree Essex, UK  
Apostle Otha Bell – Georgetown, Texas  
Pastor Judy Butler – Hammond, Indiana  
Prophet Rolanda Byrd – Fort Pierce, Florida  
Prophet Kandis Carney – Houston, Texas  
Minister Chituru Chukwu – London, United Kingdom  
Teacher Kevin Chukwu – Glastonbury, Connecticut  
Evangelist Janis Crew – West Branch, Iowa  
Minister Taria Waldrop-Dean – Norristown, Pennsylvania  
Evangelist Augustine Ekwunife – Padova, Italy  
Minister Stephanie Foster – Chicago, Illinois  
Minister LaTamera Fry – Kilgore, Texas  
Deacon Eddie Gaston – Detroit, Michigan  
Pastor Barbara Gaston – Detroit, Michigan  
Apostle Eva Powell Grant – Atlanta, Georgia  
Evangelist Veronica Ikechi - Chestnut England, United Kingdom  
Apostle Brenda Jamison – Philadelphia, Pennsylvania  
Apostle Dr. Katherine Jones – San Diego, California  
Apostle Alexander Ose Kofi – Oberhausen, Germany  
Pastor Eunice Mason – London, United Kingdom  
Minister Dionne Maxwell – Indianapolis, Indiana  
Minister Taylor McCarty – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Brandon McCarty – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Brittney McCarty – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Minah Mokgawa – Pretoria, South Africa  
Minister Chassity Moon – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Channing Moon – Kilgore Texas  
Apostle Anthonette Morehead – Phoenix, Arizona  
Minister Emilian Muteweri - Harlow, Essex United Kingdom  
Minister Virginia Muthithi – Nairobi, Kenya  
Minister Denise Ngari – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Joel Ngari – Kilgore, Texas  
Apostle Jerry Okojie – Lagos, Nigeria  
Pastor Betty Okojie – Lagos, Nigeria  
Pastor Pius Loise – Vicenza, Italy

Teacher Reginald Phillips – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Karen Phillips – Kilgore Texas  
Minister Sherri Raddatz – Deerpark, Texas  
Pastor Gofaone Rantshilo – Gaborone, Botswana  
Apostle Ron Shepherd – Kilgore, Texas  
Pastor Jeremiah Shepherd – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Brittney Shepherd – Kilgore, Texas  
Minister Antonio Sosa – Kilgore, Texas  
Apostle Candace Star - Fort Pierce, Florida  
Pastor Sheldon Southerland – Greensboro, North Carolina  
Apostle Sharon V. Thomas – Pottstown Pennsylvania  
Minister Marilyn Todd – Roseville, Michigan  
Bishop Martina Tomah – Columbia, South Carolina  
Apostle Patrina Torres – Ulster County, New York  
Minister Julett Bryan Waldron – London, United Kingdom  
Minister Ann Watson – Laurel, Maryland  
Apostle Denise Williams – Greensboro, North Carolina  
Pastor Tony Yeboah - London, United Kingdom  
Apostle Geneva Young – Chicago, Illinois  
Minister Tim Young – Kilgore, Texas

## Principal Officers

Director of Studies, Apostle Candace Star - Fort Pierce, Florida USA

Registrar, Minister Stephanie Foster – Chicago, Illinois USA

Special Adviser to the Visionaries, Apostle Ronald Shepherd – Kilgore, Texas USA

Managing Editor, Apostle Dr. Katherine Jones – San Diego, California USA

Director of Communication, Prophet Minister Kandis Carney – Houston, Texas USA

IMF Advisory Council, Pastor Sheldon Sutherland – Greensboro, North Carolina

Special Assistant to the Visionaries for Pastoral Outreach, Pastor Jeremiah Shepherd – Kilgore, Texas USA

Director of Research, Apostle Eva Powell Grant – Atlanta, Georgia USA

Special Assistant for Caribbean Basin, Apostle Brenda Jamison – Philadelphia, Pennsylvania USA

Special Assistant for Africa, Apostle Pat Gowera – Harare, Zimbabwe

Special Assistant for Europe, Evangelist Veronica Ikechi – Chesthunt England, United Kingdom

Special Assistant at Mission Central London, Pastor Tony Yeboah – London, United Kingdom

Special Assistant to Pastor Grace, Emiliah Muteweri -Harlow, Essex United Kingdom

# ABOUT THE AUTHOR



Apostle George & Pastor Grace are visionaries of The Global Advanced Mentorship Program and Global School of Ministry [www.globalschoolofministry.info](http://www.globalschoolofministry.info) as well as Vision holders of other ministries that serve the Kingdom Church, including Arise Metropolitan Assembly in Elm Park, Hornchurch, London, England where the fivefold are emerging to work together in activating a gift based congregation.

From the base, in London, England, the couple is used by the Holy Spirit to feed the flock of Jesus in over 120 nations. As revelation is received, a stream of resources will be made available free of charge. These resources are instrumental for teaching, training, equipping, activating and releasing saints into the royal priesthood in the order of Melchizedek.

As International President, the couple coordinates the global operations of International Ministers Fellowship [www.internationalministersfellowship.org](http://www.internationalministersfellowship.org). In this regard, networking the remnant is a passionate engagement of the couple as received from the King of Kings.

ISBN: 978-1-948291-03-3